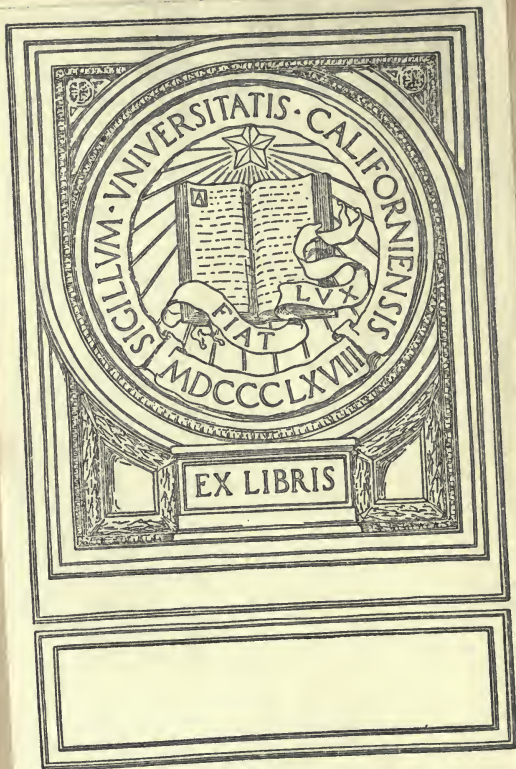


The Politician

By Edith
Huntington
Mason 



EX LIBRIS

Ueavor English
1914



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE POLITICIAN

THE COLLEGE

1 כ
 2 כ
 3 כ
 4 כ
 5 כ
 6 כ
 7 כ
 8 כ
 9 כ
 10 כ
 11 כ
 12 כ
 13 כ
 14 כ
 15 כ
 16 כ
 17 כ
 18 כ
 19 כ
 20 כ
 21 כ
 22 כ
 23 כ
 24 כ
 25 כ
 26 כ
 27 כ
 28 כ
 29 כ
 30 כ
 31 כ
 32 כ
 33 כ
 34 כ
 35 כ
 36 כ
 37 כ
 38 כ
 39 כ
 40 כ
 41 כ
 42 כ
 43 כ
 44 כ
 45 כ
 46 כ
 47 כ
 48 כ
 49 כ
 50 כ
 51 כ
 52 כ
 53 כ
 54 כ
 55 כ
 56 כ
 57 כ
 58 כ
 59 כ
 60 כ
 61 כ
 62 כ
 63 כ
 64 כ
 65 כ
 66 כ
 67 כ
 68 כ
 69 כ
 70 כ
 71 כ
 72 כ
 73 כ
 74 כ
 75 כ
 76 כ
 77 כ
 78 כ
 79 כ
 80 כ
 81 כ
 82 כ
 83 כ
 84 כ
 85 כ
 86 כ
 87 כ
 88 כ
 89 כ
 90 כ
 91 כ
 92 כ
 93 כ
 94 כ
 95 כ
 96 כ
 97 כ
 98 כ
 99 כ
 100 כ



"Isn't that sacrificing too much?"

[Page 151]

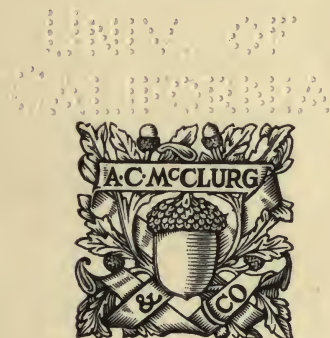
THE POLITICIAN

BY

Edith Huntington Mason

Author of "The Real Agatha"

ILLUSTRATED IN FULL COLOR
BY THE KINNEYS



CHICAGO
A. C. McCLURG & CO.
1910

961
M3984
pol

COPYRIGHT

By A. C. McCLURG & Co.

1910

Published April 9, 1910

Entered at Stationers' Hall, London, England

TO THE
PUBLISHERS

PRESS OF THE VAIL COMPANY
COSHOCOTON, U. S. A.

To E. P. P.

WHOSE FRIENDSHIP HAS MADE IT
POSSIBLE FOR ME TO WRITE THIS BOOK

M255525

1875

THE
LIBRARY OF THE
MUSEUM OF NATURAL HISTORY
AND
ZOOLOGY
OF THE
CITY OF LONDON

1875

CONTENTS

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	AFTER FOUR YEARS	9
II	PATRIOTISM AND PEANUTS	24
III	"FOR THE HUNDREDTH TIME"	56
IV	POLITICS AND LETTERS	69
V.	"HERE WE ARE, CORA!"	93
VI	THE EPISODE OF THE BRACELET	102
VII	FAME, LOVE, AND FORTUNE	119
VIII	MRS. GIBBS ON "RESPONSIBILITY"	131
IX	TEMPTATION	155
X	"WHO KNOWS BUT THE WORLD MAY END TO-NIGHT?"	177
XI	VERNEY TAKES THE VEIL	196
XII	THE STRUGGLE AT SARATOGA	214
XIII	"FRIENDS, HOW GOES THE FIGHT?"	232
XIV	RIVALS	248
XV	THE ONE THING A WOMAN MUST NOT SAY	258
XVI	LIGHT	274
XVII	THE FURY OF A WOMAN SCORNE	283
XVIII	WHAT MONEY CANNOT BUY	298

The Politician

Contents—*Continued*

CHAPTER	PAGE
XIX	"SO THEY DREW ON TOWARDS THE HOUSE OF THE INTERPRETER" . . . 318
XX	VERNEY LOSES HIS TEMPER . . . 348
XXI	"NOT LAUNCELOT OR ANOTHER" . . 374
XXII	"I ALWAYS WANT MOST WHAT I CANNOT HAVE" . . . 395

ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
“Is n’t that sacrificing too much?” . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
“Did n’t you even tell your best friend, when they proposed?”	64
“Any one rather than the present Governor” . . .	226
“Why did this happen to me?”	316



THE POLITICIAN

CHAPTER I

AFTER FOUR YEARS

THE first warm days of June held the city in their grasp, and the far-famed lake breeze was traitorously absent from the streets. Yet in spite of the heat, the doors of the great structure where the Republican National Convention was being held continued to engulf their thousands. For blocks on both sides of Sixteenth Street, cars and carriages and automobiles were bringing more guests of the convention to add to the crowd that already seemed to fill Wabash Avenue from side to side. A fluctuating mass, the people ebbed and flowed against the front of the Coliseum, animated by but one purpose, to get within its four walls.

In such a concourse the arrival of this and that unit by carriage or automobile was unremarked, and the limousine which contained the party of Mrs. Horace Cumloch paused in its turn before the high-arched entrance, deposited its passengers, and then pursued its difficult way onward through the crowd without attracting particular attention. Of the few spectators

The Politician

of this incident whose participation in the feverish spirit of the hour did not keep them from curiously scrutinizing their betters, none appreciated the fact that the tall lady in black and white with the beautiful gray hair, who stepped first from the machine, was the widow of a prominent Chicago millionaire and a well-known figure in the society of earlier days, or their inspection of the new arrivals would have been more curious still. Neither did any realize that the young girl in the linen suit and wide black hat who accompanied her was Miss Harriet Rand, a debutante of several seasons, much travelled, much praised and still unspoiled, and incidentally heiress of the late Willard T. Rand, merchant prince. Yet that the party were "somebodies" was immediately and unanimously conceded, for distinction though unannounced is a quality that in itself commands attention, and these people were distinguished. Besides Mrs. Cumloch and her niece there were Mr. and Mrs. Lawrence Presbey, very well known among the young married people of the city, and George Calvert Benton, notable in that company not so much for the rather large fortune which he possessed as for his persistent and assiduous courtship of Miss Harriet Rand.

"Don't you love the Coliseum?" remarked Mrs. Presbey, whose smart attire and well-kept hair served her in the place of beauty, when they had reached the interior gloom of the big building. "It always reminds me of the horse show or a circus; does n't it you, Harriet?" she added, as they mounted the flight of stairs that

After Four Years

led to the section where Mr. Presbey and George Benton were already endeavoring to find their seats. But Harriet had no smiling rejoinder to make to this frivolity.

"I should n't think the Republican National Convention would make you think of a *circus*, Cornelia," she said; and the emphasis on the last word as well as the girl's compressed lips and earnest eyes convinced Mrs. Presbey at once that she had said the wrong thing.

"Harriet is so intense!" she whispered to Mrs. Cumloch, as Miss Rand pressed ahead of them in her eagerness to see the great spectacle she knew was awaiting her at the top of the steps.

"She is also sincere," replied Mrs. Cumloch, "and you have n't any idea how interested she is in politics, or how much she knows on the subject. It is really quite extraordinary to hear her —"

A burst of music from the band at the far end of the building interrupted the sentence; and as they reached the top step of their climb, the full view of the convention burst upon them. It had reached Harriet — mounting just ahead of them — first, and held her now speechless and enthralled in the middle of the aisle; lips parted, hands clasped, and dark eyes twice their natural size in their effort to take the majestic measure of that impressive scene. Far and wide, wave on wave, stretched the rows of faces back to the four walls of the great oblong building, where the crowded galleries met them with more faces; and high above them all, the arch of the flag-bedecked dome roofed them in and echoed the throbbing hum of their excitement. The details of the

The Politician

picture — the cage full of musicians where it hung in mid-air at the end opposite her ; the white placards bearing the section numbers, which dotted the vast area like flecks of foam on an inky sea ; and in particular the group of black-coated, black-moustached delegates from the South who stood in the aisle just below her, appealed not at all to Harriet ; only the magnitude of the scene, only the wide desert of faces above, below, and around her. Motionless she stood, drinking it all in ; and behind her Mrs. Cumloch and Mrs. Presbey, affected quite as much by the girl's feeling as by the sight, stood also motionless.

It was a sight worth looking at, a sight to stir the hearts of true Americans, independent of party considerations. For whatever his politics, that American who looked upon it for the first time must have thrilled at the spectacle of so much organized power, and accorded it the respect which the outer and visible signs of the inner workings of a great Government cannot but inspire.

It was Mrs. Cumloch who at length took pity on the men of the party, who were gesticulating weirdly from a section farther down the aisle, very much as if they were leading a college cheer. "Come, my dear," she said to Harriet ; "they're waiting for us," and the girl, her usually clear, colorless skin pink with excitement, followed with unseeing eyes past rows of people and took her seat, still under the spell of her first sight of a convention, and without even observing the programme which the attentive Benton held out to her.

After Four Years

They had been some few moments settled in their places, and the procession of marching clubs, each booming a different candidate, was weaving its serpentine way among the delegates, accompanied by more or less cheering, according to the degree of popularity of the champion exploited. Miss Rand was enthusiastically clapping the club which bore on its flag the name of the candidate she favored, when she perceived for the first time the person whom she had come to the convention to see, and that was James Vernor Ellis, of New York, delegate from that State and known to newspaperdom as a rising young politician. Ellis was only thirty-one, but he had appeared in the newspapers a number of times during the ten years since his graduation from college, "along with the murderers, divorcees, and other famous people," as he himself was wont to put it. His career in print had been started with a column in a New York society paper chronicling the incidents of a charity bazaar, and the reply which young Mr. Ellis, then just out of college, had made to a fast and fashionable young matron who had offered to dance with him in the dancing pavilion, in exchange for fifty dollars. "Excuse me, Mrs. So-and-So," the young man was reported as saying, "but is n't that a little more than you usually ask a man for putting his arm around your waist?"

The part he played in an incident in connection with the assassination of President McKinley at Buffalo had figured next in the papers. On the evening in question, when the martyred president was lying near to death,

The Politician

a group of anxious citizens of Buffalo had gathered around a bulletin board where news of the sinking man's condition was posted. When it was learned that McKinley had only a few hours to live, some one in the crowd, for the pleasure of hearing himself talk and the more doubtful one of shocking the others, voiced the sentiment that the country was "well rid of him." The scoffer met swift punishment for his unfeeling and unpatriotic remark at the hands of Mr. Ellis, who happened to be among the bystanders, and who promptly knocked him down — a deed which won no little applause for Mr. Ellis and much exploitation by the press.

Lately his name had a habit of cropping up in accounts of things political: he had been mentioned as refusing the honor of a judgeship for reasons not stated, and again in connection with his reelection as leader of his District. And if that was not distinction enough, he had also the honor to be brother to Mrs. Lawrence Presbey. As for Harriet Rand's knowledge of him, she had met him the summer of the last convention, which was the year of her coming out.

"There's my brother!" exclaimed Mrs. Presbey, catching sight of the young man at almost the same moment with Harriet. "See, Lawrence, there's Verney!"

"Where?" said Presbey, "I don't see."

"Over in section 16, the New York section, with a brown suit and red and black hat-band," replied his wife, levelling glasses in the direction specified; and

After Four Years

then to Miss Rand, "You remember my brother, don't you, Harriet?"

"Yes," said Harriet quietly, but her thoughts flew with a rush back to that evening in Mrs. Presbey's apartment on the Lake Shore Drive, where she had met him. She had been dining with the young married couple when Ellis burst in upon them to bid his sister good-bye before leaving for New York with the other delegates. She remembered perfectly the rare intelligence and sparkle of his blue eyes, and his charmingly enunciative voice, as he laughingly denied his sister's accusation that they had seen nothing of him, and she remembered especially the few moments when the Presbys, busy arguing with each other about the best way to get to the La Salle Street Station, left them alone in conversation. It had been for a few moments only, but she remembered well one thing that he said. When she asked him if he ever expected to run for office himself, he replied, half laughing, half serious, "Oh, no! I'm only a politician; I help other people run for office." And as "the politician" her thoughts had named him ever since, making a place for him among themselves through four years of life filled to an unusual extent with travel, cultivation, and social success.

"If I could only make him see me!" said Mrs. Presbey; and in the hope of attracting her brother's attention she stood up and waved frantically, in spite of the protests of her more reserved husband, whose natural enemy was notoriety. Her efforts were quite unsuccessful, for the young man in the brown suit, who

The Politician

was just entering section 16, was too absorbed in exchanging greetings with various men about him to notice anything so unimportant as the flutter of a woman's programme half way between the New York section and the platform for the speakers.

"What's all the excitement about?" asked George Benton, waking up to the fact that something unusual was going on, and that it—whatever it was—had brought an unwonted color to the cheek of the girl beside him and a wonderful brilliance to her eyes; at the same time he was quite blissfully unaware that there was such a person as James Vernor Ellis in existence, much less that he was known to Miss Harriet Rand.

"It's Mrs. Presbey's brother," replied Harriet, gently and forbearingly, for she had an older sister's affection for Benton, "Mr. Ellis, you know. He's a delegate from New York."

"Ellis?" repeated Benton, adjusting his glasses and looking where Harriet was looking. "He's going to speak, some one told me, in support of the minority report of the Committee on Rules, representing New York State."

"Not really!" cried Harriet, and in the interest of the moment she gave his arm a little shake. George Benton's dark, amiable face broke into a smile.

"Yes, really!" he said; "but what's so extraordinary about that?" He looked admiringly down at her; but Harriet had turned her back and was excitedly telling Ellis's sister, who was not half so excited as she, that Ellis was going to make a speech.

After Four Years

The momentary animation with which a word from Miss Rand invariably lit up the rather expressionless features of the young man's face vanished almost immediately, and he leaned down and picked up Mrs. Presbey's fan, which had fallen to the floor.

"Thank you, George," returned that lady, and then addressed her husband across him.

"Lawrence," she said, in subdued but intense tones; "I do wish you could hear what this woman in front of me has been saying!"

"Which woman?" asked her husband cheerily; and then as he caught the indignant glances his wife directed at a placid-looking be-spectacled woman in the seat ahead of her, his tone grew graver.

"What's the trouble?" he asked.

"Why, if you'll believe me," returned his wife, "she keeps turning around and talking to me the whole time, telling me just who every one is and what's happening! And I never saw her before in my life!"

"Perhaps she thinks you want her to," soothed Presbey; "she probably means well!"

"Indeed she does n't," retorted Cornelia Presbey; "she's been to fourteen conventions, or so she says"—this with a scathing glance at the lady in front—"and she just wants to show off. I never—"

"My dear," interrupted the lady in front, turning half around in her seat and smiling placidly at Mrs. Presbey, "if you look now I think you can see Alice Roosevelt. Close down by the chairman's table, with a blue and white check—"

The Politician

But Mrs. Presbey had turned resolutely toward Mrs. Cumloch on her other side.

"Just as if I only came to the convention to see Alice Roosevelt!" she said indignantly to the older lady.

"Well, I daresay half the people came for that as much as for any other reason," remarked Mrs. Cumloch, tolerantly; "curiosity's the ruling passion with us Americans!"

"And the other half came to shout 'Hats off!' I should say," remarked Mr. Presbey, looking from the men in the seats behind them who were making vociferous requests that all head-gear be removed, to his wife's very becoming but undeniably large hat.

"I'd take it off, dear," he said.

"A shame, Cornelia," commiserated George Benton, who knew the Presbeyes very well, as his companion obeyed; then, looking up, "Hullo!" he said, "whom have we here? Who's taking the platform now?"

"It's Verney!" said Mrs. Presbey, restoring her wonderful light hair to its original smooth outline with one upward sweep of her hand, as a young man in a brown suit appeared on the speaker's platform. "Oh, dear! I don't see what he wants to do this sort of thing for. The family don't care about it at all, his being in politics. It's too conspicuous and degrading."

"And expensive, I should say," said Benton.

"Oh, very!" she replied.

Harriet heard, and stared. "Degrading, Cornelia?" she repeated.

"Yes," replied the young matron. "Fancy one of

After Four Years

the Ellis family associating with all the horrid men that are mixed up in politics — saloon-keepers and uneducated foreigners and I don't know what all!"

"Hush!" returned the girl peremptorily and as if she thought this remark undeserving of attention, "your brother is going to speak."

The chairman, who had introduced Mr. Ellis, had finished his few remarks and the young man stepped forward, and in a clear, well-sustained voice began his speech.

"We can't hear! Oh, I'm afraid we can't hear!" said Harriet disappointedly; "we're too far back!"

Ellis's speech on representation in the convention was brief and, to judge by the interested faces of the delegates, very much to the point, although, as Harriet had feared, Mrs. Cumloch's party were too far back to hear it all. Sentences and phrases, however, floated back to them at intervals.

"In the District in which I live," they heard him say, "over twenty-two hundred Republican votes were cast at the last election. . . . That District is entitled to two delegates in this convention. . . . In a certain District in Mississippi one hundred and seventy-eight Republican votes were cast in the last election. . . . That District is entitled to two votes in this convention. Can any one describe that as equal representation?" And again, "For weeks we have heard little except the contests between the delegates from these Southern Democratic Districts. They have made so much noise that it almost seemed that the Republican

The Politician

party and the whole Government of this country existed for the sole purpose of settling their dispute. Now the contests have been decided, and we shall hear no more of the Republican party in those Districts until the time comes for another national convention." And his clear, well-balanced setting forth of the substance of his subject, accurate in its details and convincingly expressed, brought the young speaker generous applause. Even George Benton, who was not interested in politics and was there because Harriet was there, appreciated that the speaker had distinctly "made good."

"That's a wonder of a speech for so young a man," he said to Presbey, as Ellis with a forcible parting statement, that drew him many a hand, made his bow and, accompanied by two gray-bearded statesmen, one on each side, stepped down from the platform and worked his way back to section 16.

Harriet, watching his progress through the crowd, knew without seeing how his eyes sparkled and how often he bit his lower lip with his teeth — a trick he had in conversation when he had made his point and awaited comment upon it. What followed, the remaining programme of the convention, was to her an anti-climax, even the Roosevelt demonstration; though the epidemic of cheering was catching, and she found herself repeating "Four, four, four years more," with the best of them.

"If only he could hear it, if only the President were here!" she said to George Benton, raising her voice almost to a shout, the din about them was so great.

After Four Years

"He can," replied Benton; "he is."

"How do you mean?" asked Miss Rand, puzzled.

"Long distance telephone," replied the man. "He's had his ear fast to it from the beginning!" And he pointed out to her the three black discs about five feet in front of the platform, where the speakers stood, which were the receivers of the instruments.

Harriet thrilled. "How proud—how proud he must be!" she said. And because of that listening ear she looked upon the scene of uproar with new interest; at the shrieking people clinging to rafters and standing on chairs, waving hats and programmes in the maddest kind of excitement; at the delegates in the middle, most of them instructed, and some with their votes determined long before their arrival in Chicago, sitting silent and with folded arms; and at one old man in particular, who had taken off his coat and was waving it about his head like a flag; while in her ears sounded the monotonous chant of two men behind her who had not ceased to cry "Down in front!" since the beginning of the demonstration.

"Let's go home," said Mrs. Presbey, when the cheering had lasted nearly half an hour and showed no signs of diminishing. "I'm tired and sick of all this noise, and the heat is dreadful!"

"Where's your enthusiasm, Cornelia, my dear?" asked Mrs. Cumloch, who looked as cool and calm as if it were not 90 degrees in the shade. "Have n't you more patriotism than that?"

"Not in hot weather, Mrs. Cumloch," returned Mrs.

The Politician

Presbey ; and then to her husband, "Lawrence, you run around to section 16 and tell the Politician — tell Verney — that we're going, and that he's to come out and meet us at the door ; I want to see him." Mr. Presbey vanished obediently, and the others, acquiescing in her desire to leave, arose.

"I think," said the woman in front of them, turning around as they did so, "that if you look now you can see Alice—" But she had not time to finish her sentence, for her victim had hurried out into the aisle.

"Did you ever hear anything like that?" enquired Mrs. Presbey breathlessly, as the rest joined her. "Why, she regularly persecuted me!"

"Yes," agreed Harriet, inattentively ; "but what did you call your brother then, when you sent Mr. Presbey for him, Cornelia?"

"'The Politician.' Why?" returned Mrs. Presbey.

"No reason," replied the girl, who could not have confessed to his sister that she had thought of Ellis by that name ever since she had first seen him.

"We've always called him that, Lawrence and I," went on the young married woman, "ever since he took up politics. More for fun than anything else. It seems so absurd, you know, that Verney should really be a politician! He's so good-looking and altogether aristocratic!"

"It is n't generally considered a compliment to be called one, I suppose," said Mrs. Cumloch.

"Is n't it?" said her niece. "Well, it ought to be."

"Far from being a compliment," remarked Benton,

After Four Years

at Miss Rand's side as usual; "it's often the reverse. From its association with the comic paper idea of a politician, I imagine; and that would be the most widely accepted one, you see. To my mind the title only calls up a picture of a fat man with a fat cigar in his mouth and fat diamonds on his hands."

"There they are!" exclaimed Mrs. Presbey, and the next second her husband, short, round-faced and perspiring, and her brother, tall and distinguished, had joined them.

"Here's the Politician!" cried Lawrence Presbey jovially. And during the course of the next moment or two, when Mrs. Presbey had ceased to overwhelm her brother with questions and chatter, he and Harriet clasped hands again — after four years.

CHAPTER II

PATRIOTISM AND PEANUTS

IT had been arranged before they parted that Mr. Ellis was to dine that evening at Mrs. Cumloch's house in Lake Forest. The young man had accepted the older lady's invitation with every sign of pleasure, although the smile which went with his few words of thanks had been for her niece; and Mr. and Mrs. Presbey, who were coming too, had agreed to bring him out with them as soon as the convention was over. George Benton, as a matter of course, for he was a great favorite with Mrs. Cumloch, was to accompany her and Harriet back to Lake Forest in their automobile.

The convention was unexpectedly late in closing that afternoon, and the Presbeys arriving a little after seven, accompanied by Ellis, found the rest of the dinner party assembled on the south terrace of the white marble Venetian palace which Mrs. Horace Cumloch chose to call her "summer home," and were cordially greeted by their hostess. The young man from New York — the others happened to be all Chicagoans — bowed to nearly a dozen people as he was introduced. He wore the same brown suit that Harriet had seen him in that afternoon, as the lateness of the convention had

Patriotism and Peanuts

not given him time to change. Every other man in the party was in evening dress, but he did not explain the matter, feeling that apology for something he could not help was unnecessary. Superfluous explanation was never his habit in any event.

“ You know we have a politician among us to-night,” remarked Mrs. Cumloch, as they sat down to the table, “ a real, live politician,” and she smiled kindly at Ellis. Whereupon the conversation centred at once, firmly and politely, in spite of the young delegate’s modest efforts to stave it off, upon the convention, the scene of enthusiasm that afternoon, and the results of the day’s session, not to mention the small part which the stranger among them, the guest from out of town, had played. Started in a spirit of politeness merely, it seemed to grow and flourish until it had shed its shell of perfunctory interest and become an animated, living thing under the magnetic touch, the flashing eye, and the earnest accents of the “ Politician.”

“ It’s like watching a finely bred race-horse quivering for the start to watch that fellow talk on his favorite subject,” remarked a middle-aged lawyer, Lee Stanton, who was one of those present, to the man who sat nearest him. “ Never saw such whole-souled enthusiasm in my life!”

“ And about politics, too,” commented his wife from across the way, with surprise that was almost scornful — “ such a dry, uninteresting subject!”

That was it exactly. Mrs. Stanton had unconsciously voiced the opinion of every one there in her

The Politician

remark. Either through natural indifference or indolence or because of the general tendency of people not directly connected with public affairs to condemn political conditions as too bad to improve, and on that account not worth talking about, the subject had heretofore been dry and uninteresting to Mrs. Cumloch's guests. And that was what made Verney's enthusiasm so amazing to them. It was so inspiring, so sincere, so convincing, that from a feeling almost of self-obligation they responded in kind, felt their eyes kindle when his did, were enthusiastic too.

Ellis was a new type to these wealthy, contented people, whose lines lay in pleasant places far removed from the responsibilities of public life and the harassing questions pertaining to the government of the country. He was not, however, in any sense an extraordinary young man, only a thoroughly practical dyed-in-the-wool Republican-organization politician, whose god was the Republican party and whose religion was "regularity." But he was at the same time a man of principle and integrity, which qualities identified him with the honest minority among politicians instead of the corrupt majority. He even went so far as to cherish ambitions and schemes for obtaining civil service reform, although his field of activity was not extensive and he had as yet only been connected with State and city politics. These he expected to realize not as the New School reformers wished to do, by means of abolishing political organization, but by reforming it.

It was this fact, apart from his personal magnetism,

Patriotism and Peanuts

which explained the flattering attention with which his auditors regarded him and the impression which he seemed to have made upon them. The anomaly of a machine politician with ideals, who worked for reform and patriotism, was too novel in their experience not to be entertaining. Then, too, that very class-feeling which made Mrs. Presbey term politics degrading and which accounted for the tone of scorn with which Mrs. Stanton had described the subject as "dry and uninteresting," compelled them to respect this man who was one of them, and who yet was not too proud to take off his gloves and do the work they all knew must be done, no matter how they despised it. No wonder they drew closer round the table and hung on his words, with much the same wondering and curious interest as dancers in a ballroom during some great war might display upon the entrance of a soldier with news from the front.

Harriet looked about her with a peculiar sense of pride that she somehow felt she had a right to, as she noted their absorbed faces and realized that Verney was the centre of attention. How interested they all seemed, these ten or eleven people that she had known all her life — the Stantons, friends of her aunt's; young Francis Morton, who had been her devoted friend and comrade since the earliest of their common twenty-four years; Pauline Wright, the one girl whose friendship among girls meant the most; George Benton, the Presbeys, her aunt's brother, Mr. Case, and the two other men who made the party complete.

"What we need most," he was saying to Mr. Case,

The Politician

in reply to some question of the older man's, quite unconscious that his audience was not that gentleman alone, but the whole table, "what we need most, what the country needs, is more men of character and ability in politics. I don't mean to fill the important administrative positions at Washington; I mean to go down into the thick of things, the beginning of things, to give their time and ability to political work in city and State. It is n't enough, you know, to polish the outside of the platter; to be clean, the inside must be polished too." He paused and bit his lip in the manner Harriet remembered so well, and then smiled boyishly, as his glance compassed the circle of interested faces. "And I don't see why they don't enter by the thousand," he went on. "It does seem strange, does n't it, that the men who would lay down everything to answer a call for volunteers if there was a war, should refuse to serve their country in this other equally important way — politically. That's the way to retrench the power of the bosses — supplant them with good men. When there are more good men than bad in a political machine, it won't be corrupt any longer."

"It's undoubtedly the right theory," replied Mr. Case, thoughtfully, "that the country should have more good men in politics, but the trouble is that it's difficult to put in practice. The good men, you know, as a rule have n't time to give to public life. Their private interests prevent. That's natural enough; a man must live and earn his daily bread."

"Yes, but at least he does n't have to be indifferent,"

Patriotism and Peanuts

expostulated Verney. "Every one can't run for office, of course, but those that can't can be interested in what's going on. I read somewhere in the preface to some good stories about politics, that if all the good men understand when wrong things are being done, that's all that's necessary. The wrong things stop being done. To be interested is the least that any man who lays claim to any patriotism can do."

Mr. Case, elderly broker and man of the world, smiled as one smiles at youthful enthusiasm, indulgently. "You speak warmly," he said; "yet to my mind there's every excuse for a man's minding his own affairs first, even should the country go to ruin on that account. Particularly a man with a family. He owes them his first duty. Certainly he should try, if he is able, to give political affairs attention at the same time; but if he fails, I, for one, should hesitate to criticise. Indifference I should call regrettable, but I can't say that I'd call it a crime."

"I do," asserted Verney, promptly; "a crime against the State, against the nation, Mr. Case. Interest in public affairs need not interfere with a man's duty to his family, you know, although participation in them might. And where a man who has no duty of the kind is concerned, and indifference to public affairs actually prevents his participation in them, I don't see how it can be called anything less than criminal."

"The indifference of men in those circumstances, if it continue to exist, will eventually prove the destruction of all hope of obtaining good government for this coun-

The Politician

try. But I don't think it will continue. I think we are growing out of it already." He lifted his head as a swimmer who breasts great waves lifts his for a sight of land and sees it just ahead. "Every year, every day, men of education and character join the ranks of men in public life. They are the army of the Republic in times of peace! And these recruits, these soldiers, are for the most part young men!" He paused, and his voice took a quiet, hushed tone. "Why, I know men in New York," he said, "forty and fifty and sixty of them, who have taken up active political work during the last month or so, and I don't think one of them is over thirty-five."

"That's encouraging, isn't it?" volunteered Mrs. Stanton, made enthusiast for the moment, self-centred and narrow-minded as she was, by virtue of the Politician's enthusiasm, "to have the young men come to the rescue."

"The most encouraging thing in the world!" returned Ellis, earnestly; "because if the young men are forswearing the vice of indifference, if when they are just starting out in life and have their way still to make, they think politics important enough to give it their attention, there is hope for the future of American government."

A pause followed this remark,—no one among his audience seeming able to contribute anything further to the subject, in lieu of which they unanimously turned their attention to the goods which the gods, in the guise of Mrs. Cumloch, had provided, and which a butler and

Patriotism and Peanuts

two footmen following one another in noiseless procession about the table, set before them in such variety.

"I've often thought," presently remarked Francis Morton, who had but lately graduated from an Eastern college, "that I'd like to go into politics myself; only the trouble is that a fellow can't get a start anywhere — at all high up, you know, I mean. And, of course," added the young fellow, speaking with the assurance which his father's millions and the consciousness that he belonged to one of the oldest families in that part of the country lent him, "ward politics is too dirty a business for a gentleman to mix with."

Ellis regarded him earnestly for a moment, his eager lips begging words of rebuke from his teeming brain, but he would not indulge them. He knew the boy was wrong, that he did n't look at the question of entering public life in the right way, but he could n't very well tell him so. He recognized in the self-satisfied youth a type with which he was very familiar, the young man who imagines he wants to go into politics in order to do something for his country, but whose real object is to have his country do something for him — to establish him in a position of importance and consequence.

Verney hoped some one would explain to Morton before long this misapprehension of his, but he did not feel quite warranted in doing so himself. So he only sighed and said gently: "I think you would regret it if you were able to start high up, as you propose. It's all very well to be an ambassador or a diplomat," he sensed readily from his knowledge of the type, that that

The Politician

was the kind of position the young man had in mind when he spoke; "but a man misses a lot in taking up politics without starting at the beginning of the game."

After dinner was over, as Mrs. Cumloch and the others sipped their coffee out on the wide stone terrace flowering with strange plants and sweet with alien perfumes that hemmed in the spreading low-roofed house, interest in politics as a subject for conversation did not flag, although this thoroughly representative group of people, belonging to what is known as the "better class," had not taken before the advent of the young New Yorker more interest in that subject than was necessary to appear intelligent.

"He's quite hopelessly one-ideaed, you know," said Mrs. Cumloch (Verney was at the other end of the terrace with the younger people, out of ear-shot), "but in this repressed, artificial day and generation such enthusiasm about anything is refreshing. A man who is n't afraid to admit that he's bound up in his work to the exclusion of all else commands my admiration."

"And I like his sort of one-ideanness," added Mrs. Stanton. "I can't endure hobbies as a rule, but one that aims to do something for somebody else — make something better — is too unusual not to be interesting. He could n't bore me, let him trot it never so far and fast!"

"That is n't a bad theory of his," remarked Mr. Case, stirring his coffee musingly, "that it's the men who belong to these all-powerful political machines there's such an outcry against these days who are best

Patriotism and Peanuts

able to wage war against the unscrupulous bosses that have corrupted them."

"Yes, and of course it's true," said Lee Stanton, "that the more men of his stamp there are in the political field — men who are n't corrupt and who are willing to wage war — the more chance there is that the fight will be successful."

But their efforts to engage Mr. James Vernor Ellis, or "Verney," as he was more familiarly called, in the same sort of discussion they had had at dinner, proved vain. Each one in turn made the attempt when the party had drawn closer together again, but the young man's ready flow of words in regard to things political seemed to have deserted him quite. But not so his spirits, for he conversed lightly and entertainingly on various other subjects, amusing them all with anecdote and story, and trying to bring every one into the conversation.

"He's afraid he's bored us, the foolish boy," thought Harriet, divining the motive behind this course as readily as if Ellis himself had told her, and went over to the swinging bench where he sat. Yet the two had hardly addressed each other directly the evening through. Not that Miss Rand was gifted with any special powers of divination; but she had happened to know a great many men very well, and her excellent mind and quick intelligence enabled her to apply this general knowledge very readily to specific cases. This she did the more accurately because her judgment of mankind had never been blinded, or its clarity impaired by the existence of any

The Politician

kind of love affair. Men in plenty had loved her — all sorts and conditions, ranging in kind from the exquisitely garbed, innocent-faced college youths (for whose acquaintance young Francis Morton had been largely responsible in his eagerness not to have Harriet miss a single game or social function at his college) to the lusty corn-fed Westerners she had met the preceding summer while visiting in Colorado — mining engineers and ranch men for the most part — not to mention the various specimens of the sex encountered abroad and catalogued in her mind as “foreigners.” But never a one had she loved. If she had, she might have been, as far as the latter class was concerned, at least, countess or duchess many times over; for in their eyes, the millions of the late Willard T. Rand would have been ample inducement for the marriage, even if his daughter had been less fair. As it was, however, she had sailed over the troublous waters of the sea of love as serenely and with as much dignity as a stately swan over its native waters.

And because she never had fallen in love, Harriet decided that she never would do so. She had satisfied herself that her friendships, her horses, her drawing, and her travels with her aunt, could fill her life to completeness, fatherless and motherless though she was. She was only twenty-four, and singularly childlike and unsophisticated in a great many ways, at least in so far as she herself was concerned. Her knowledge of life as applied to others was normally sufficient; but the very nature of her own carefully nurtured and sheltered exist-

Patriotism and Peanuts

ence prevented her from having any but the vaguest ideas of possible storm and stress. She was like Kipling's ship before she found herself, open to any interpretation of her character but the right one; and while she enjoyed a gallop upon her favorite horse Phantom more than anything else in the world, she was persuaded that in reality she preferred a lecture or a musical recital. In a word, good red blood and warm sympathies were at a discount in her estimation of the needs of character, and brain and intellect at their highest valuation. As a result, the men she knew found her rather hard to talk to; even those among them who wished to marry her had not altogether understood her, and had fallen in love, if not with her money, then with her rare disposition or her beauty, overlooking almost to a man her undoubted cleverness. It takes a clever man to appreciate a clever woman, and most of the men Harriet had known well were more notably rich or well born than anything else.

And yet her dearest foe could hardly call the girl complex. She was easily enough understood if anyone were to disregard her own valuation of herself and, with a broader, more impersonal judgment, take into account the merits incident to her warm, unselfish, and sympathetic nature. But that was one of the many things George Benton did not know about Harriet. He was not very clever himself, only good and honest and sufficiently successful in his business; and he thought so much of her that he did not know enough to doubt her judgment on any point. So he talked to

The Politician

her always about books and pictures and the things he thought she liked to talk about and, not being particularly interested himself, naturally failed to interest her. That was at the beginning of their intimacy; but during the most recent of the many years he had known and cared for her, he had come to take the most pleasure in her society when there was no speech between them, when perhaps she sewed or read and he was permitted to sit beside her smoking, or reading too, as the case might be. To this faithful and too docile lover the joy that is in silence was as familiar as to any cloistered monk, and it was therefore with a look of envy not unmixed with astonishment that he observed the animated conversation in which Ellis and Miss Rand had engaged, sitting together on the swinging bench.

"It's the most amazing thing in the world," he remarked to Mrs. Presbey, "but Harriet actually seems enthusiastic when your brother talks to her!"

Mrs. Presbey laughed as she and Benton left the terrace together; for Mrs. Cumloch had suggested bridge, and her guests were following her in to the card tables. "Almost human!" she returned, "but I'm not at all surprised. That's Verney. He has a humanizing effect on every one; he'd have it on a stone image, I verily believe, if he were left alone with one!"

"Would he?" asked Benton, quite seriously, and casting a parting rueful glance back at Ellis and Harriet, who had excused themselves from cards and were remaining behind.

"Mr. Ellis has n't finished his cigarette, Aunt Lydia,"

Patriotism and Peanuts

Harriet had said, settling herself more comfortably on the capacious swinging seat. "Besides," she finished, with the self-possession of a girl who has been out four years and around the world more than once, "I want to talk to him."

"You don't want to talk to me half as much as I want to talk to you," Ellis remarked, as he reseated himself at the other end of the porch swing and noted again the fineness of the girl's profile as she bent to adjust a tall lamp near her, and the beauty of line which her bending figure displayed in spite of the soft folds of her rose-colored gown. He liked pretty women, did Verney Ellis, and he was used to them, too; so that Harriet's good looks, while he was quite aware of them, did not in any sense take his breath away. And as far as that goes, there was really nothing unusual about her sort of beauty. She owned in common with thousands of other young American girls a slim, straight figure and regular features, and shared with them their heritage of perfect health and that indefinable air of "class" which belongs to a magnificent majority of girls all over the land. Contour and line constituted her claims to beauty rather than color and animation, and her special title to distinction lay in her wide dark eyes, which seemed to hold within their range of vision vistas of another land. "Madonna eyes," George Benton called them, but then George Benton was very much in love.

"It was a great sight this afternoon," said Harriet, rightly taking for granted that he would talk politics

The Politician

to her without doubting her interest where he had doubted that of his auditors at dinner. To that extent was the subtle sympathy at work between them felt by both.

"You mean the demonstration for Roosevelt?" questioned Ellis.

"Particularly, yes. Wasn't it really wonderful? And do you know, what impressed me most about it was the thought that he was listening all the time!" said Harriet.

"Who? the Man of Impulses?"

"Is that what you call the President?"

"It's what the men in Wall Street call him."

"Why?" Harriet asked.

"Oh, because he does things in a hurry, I suppose."

"His impulsiveness does n't seem to have made him any less popular," said Harriet, "if the demonstration in his favor to-day was any proof. Did you ever see such enthusiasm?"

"No," returned Ellis, "they made a noise all right. But did you notice who was making the noise?"

"Why, the people!"

"Just so; it was the people, the excitement-loving, unthinking rank and file of outsiders who had 'come for the ride' like the young person named Hyde, of Limerick fame, and were taking their money's worth out in cheering. But the delegates, the instruments of government chosen not by the 'people' as represented by those few odd thousands of hysterical persons in the Coliseum this afternoon, but by the think-

Patriotism and Peanuts

ing majority in every State in the Union, were silent." He paused, and his meaning sank into Harriet's mind.

"You mean that the demonstration did n't count for anything, then?" she asked.

"For nothing but good will. The men who were empowered to act, you see, who were otherwise instructed with the approbation of the President himself, did n't join in the demonstration; and without their coöperation the cheering had absolutely no significance — not if it had lasted forty days instead of forty minutes."

"How strange!" said Harriet, taking his every word for gospel, accompanied as it was by kindling glances from his bright eye while he spoke and that impulsive catch at his lip when he ceased. "I should have thought that enthusiasm so spontaneous as that must have had significance."

"It's a question even whether it was altogether spontaneous, that is, wholly abandoned and unpremeditated," returned the young man thoughtfully. "I myself think it was, in great part; but a rather amusing incident that happened near where I was sitting convinced me that it was not entirely so. There was an old man down in front of us, about the middle of his section, who had taken off his coat in his enthusiasm and was waving it about his head as if it were a flag."

"I know," interrupted Miss Rand; "I saw him."

"Did you? Well, you remember how he went on, shouting and waving his coat like mad?"

The Politician

"Yes, he was so excited he did n't know or care what he was doing!"

"I beg your pardon, he did," corrected Ellis, smiling; "that's just my point. It looked like spontaneous feeling pure and simple, but as a matter of fact he knew quite well what he was doing, so much so that *when he took off his coat and before he began waving it*, he first took all the change out of his pockets! Deliberately put his hands into his pockets and extracted his money so that he should n't lose it. Spontaneous, was n't it?"

"You don't mean it?" she said, half smiling and half shocked.

"Yes," affirmed the young man; "he was quite near us, and I saw him." They laughed, and a pause ensued, with an unembarrassed quality about it as in the pauses between persons who have known each other long; and presently Ellis rose and walked a few steps over to the broad stone balustrade of the unroofed porch.

"Lord, but it's great to get out under a big sky on a June night again after the heat and noise of the convention!" he said. "And I'm glad to get West too; it's something I don't often do, but I like it a lot when I get here!"

"And that from a New Yorker!" returned Harriet. "But I'm glad you like us."

"I do," said Ellis, "both the place and the people. It's bully to get a change of scene, and you know this little visit to Chicago is fun for me, and restful. Even

Patriotism and Peanuts

the convention is restful when I think how I shall have to work when I get back to New York."

"Will you? What will you have to do?" she asked. "What is the next move on the political programme?"

"The next move," replied the Politician, ceasing suddenly to look out upon the dim starlit stretch of honest Illinois prairie which Mrs. Cumloch had chosen to leave unadorned on that side of the house, and coming back to the swing, where he seated himself rather closer to Harriet than he had been before, "the bull's eye upon which political interest will centre next will be the question who shall be the next Governor of New York State." A new look came into his face as he spoke, a certain decision and determination that closed his lips firmly over his even teeth, and brought fire into his eyes. Harriet felt vaguely that she was glad he was so near as he was.

"Won't they renominate Downes, the present Governor?" she asked. Since her meeting with Ellis four years ago she had kept in touch with politics, and was, as Mrs. Cumloch had remarked to Mrs. Presbey that afternoon, "unusually well informed on the subject."

"Won't he get the nomination again?"

"Not if I can help it," returned Ellis, tersely.

"Why not?" she enquired, surprised. "I thought he was doing so much reform work?"

"It depends upon what you call reform. If you mean the introduction of the ideas of one man who expects unquestioning obedience to them; who, though

The Politician

undeniably able and honest, is narrow and has, as Kipling says, 'too much ego in his cosmos,' I think the term is misapplied. And I don't think it is accomplishing any reform either, to discriminate in making appointments against men who have done party work, to suspect the integrity of men who have been politically active, or to assume that any man who has been an energetic organization-man is probably unfit to be trusted with public affairs."

"Oh," said Harriet, "I didn't know. I didn't understand. Then you don't approve of the Governor?"

"I distinctly do not. Neither do a great many men in politics much higher up than I am. These reasons among others I might give for disapproving of him, are theirs as well as mine. And I have my private ones, too. The Governor is not a good judge of men, and he has appointed sometimes men of mediocre ability and sometimes men who were unfit. Through this same lack of discernment he has from time to time been misled into trusting the opinions or taking the advice of men whose judgment was valueless or wrong, and who were imposing on the Governor for their own ends. Then, too, he is swayed by the newspapers, not controlled, of course, but influenced, and by what they say of him. Of course I believe a man in public life should watch the papers with care to learn, so far as they are an indication, the trend of public opinion. But they are a most unsafe guide to follow blindly. Often they represent clamor only, and the courses they

Patriotism and Peanuts

urge would be disastrous if pursued. A man should not be susceptible to their flattery, and the Governor I think is too much so. I believe that of him, I swear to the Lord I do."

Any one of Verney's intimates — his mother's brother, Richmond Vernor, for instance, or his friends among politicians — would have known at once when he said "I swear to the Lord" that Verney was speaking with the strength of absolute conviction; for it was an expression he always used, rather reverently than as one breaking the third commandment, when he was most in earnest. Patent then as his sincerity was to the most casual observer, how was it other than inevitable that his words should carry conclusive weight with a girl like Harriet, whose mind was like fallow ground ready for the harrow, and who admired this man with whom she was talking more than any man she had yet met? Downes as a hero, as an influence for good, was blasted forever in her estimation by the lightning of the young politician's frown.

"And have you a better man in mind to nominate instead?" she asked.

"Yes," he replied; "and the chief reason why I think he's better is because he bases his theories of reform upon the possibility of reforming party organization, while Downes bases his upon destroying it. That's what is going to keep me working so hard when I get back to New York. There are a lot of influential men who think the way I do about this man I want to have elected the next Governor of the State,

The Politician

It's so early in the game I hardly like to mention his name; but I will tell *you*," he said, and Harriet flushed at the implied confidence. "It's a great friend of mine, a man named Oliver Ordway. I don't know if you have heard of him, but he's Speaker of the House in Albany."

"How exciting!" said Harriet, her eyes alight; "is he a young man?"

"Yes, hardly any older than I am. Just imagine, Governor at thirty-four! Would n't that be an honor?" He drew in his breath quickly and put out an impulsive hand toward Harriet.

She knew that without thinking, as naturally and confidently as a little boy in need of sympathy for some mighty project, he wished her to clasp it. And she wished that she could. But one of them had to remain level-headed and unaffected by emotion, or what was to become of the conventions? Sympathy, warm, human, genuine evidence of a reciprocal sentiment, had no place in their harsh philosophy, and it was a philosophy she had been brought up upon.

"And you?" she said, leaning toward him; and though she did not take his hand, George Benton would not have recognized the "Madonna eyes" he talked so much about, so of the world worldly was their expression, "would n't it mean something to you? Would n't you be honored too?"

"You mean get an office if my friend were elected? Perhaps I would," said Ellis thoughtfully.

"But that's not why you are going to try to get

Patriotism and Peanuts

him the nomination, is it?" she said quickly, but it was more a statement than a question.

"Oh, no!" he replied, "material reward may come a man's way, of course, but he does n't go into politics for the sole purpose of seeking it, you know. Not if he's worth anything."

"Then what does he go into politics for," she asked, "patriotism?"

In spite of herself, her tone was sceptical, for her previously conceived notion of the character of a politician which she did not at the moment associate with the man to whom she was talking, identified it with that of a person whose only ambition is self-aggrandizement.

Verney noticed the scepticism. He would have expected it from most people; if he had been in the habit of discussing such things with every one, that is; but from Harriet he had not. That was why he permitted himself to talk about the subject with her at all, or to admit that he had ideals. It was a little disappointing, but then, he reflected, people were very much alike, and the idea that a politician could not by any possibility be an honest man was almost universal, and with some justification, as no one knew better than himself. He found that he could not conscientiously blame her for her attitude.

"Why not," he said gravely, patiently, "why should n't patriotism be his motive as well as more unworthy ones?"

"Oh, I don't know. No reason perhaps; only—" she hesitated.

The Politician

"Only that's not a sentiment usually attributed to politicians?" he said. "Is that what you were going to say?"

"Yes," she admitted.

"I was afraid so, and I'm afraid you're right. It is n't generally attributed to them, and justly, perhaps, because it is perfectly true that the majority of men in politics are quite devoid of the sentiment, and are actuated only by motives of self-interest and gain!"

"And the reputation of politicians as a class has suffered in consequence?"

"Yes. And that is going to be—is, one of my ambitions, Harriet—to clear their reputation, raise it from the mud. To say that a man's a politician—in the sense that he's willing to work for his country, should mean the same as to say he's a patriot. And if I live, if one man can do it by being straight and honest himself, I swear to the Lord I'll make it true!" He got up and took a turn up and down the terrace in front of her, his graceful, well-built form showing first in the circle of light cast by the tall porch lamp and then against the faint background of the starry sky. Up and down, up and down, he strode, his arms folded, his eyes alight, his brain very busy with big thoughts, that most stimulating of all stimulants—ambition—rendering him for the moment quite unconscious of his surroundings and even of the presence of Miss Rand.

As for the girl, she sat and watched him without a murmur of protest against this neglect, and warming her

Patriotism and Peanuts

heart with the thought that he had called her "Harriet," even though she knew as she cherished it, that he had done so quite inadvertently and without intent. In the same way she glowed at the recollection of that impulsive hand stretched out to her while every sense, every one of her well-trained faculties, told her that the young man, this fascinating, this altogether charming Verney Ellis, had gone to school of women to learn that charm. His undisguised and quite delightful assumption that she would be interested in what interested him, the tones of his voice when he spoke to her, his readiness to adjust wrap or mantle or to render any small service, in short, his "little way," were, to this girl who understood men, all straws pointing which way the wind blew, and left her acquainted beyond all manner of doubt with the knowledge that he had known many women well and made love to not a few. As he was to her, so he was to them. That women, on the other hand, had run ceaselessly and untiringly after him, she took no less for granted. How could she do otherwise when she had her own suddenly acquired admiration of him as testimony to the speed with which he acquired admirers?

That night, when he had gone with the other guests, she went to her aunt's room, long hair hanging in a dark braid down over her silken *négligé*.

"I came to say good-night," she said, settling herself in a large chintz armchair before her aunt's open fireplace, where a small blaze burned. Though it was June, the evening had turned rather cold.

The Politician

"Always welcome, dear," said Mrs. Cumloch, pleasant and smiling as she moved about the room in leisurely process of retiring, receiving at intervals the attentions of her maid; and then at random, "How did you like Mr. Ellis?"

"I think he's wonderful; I think I'd rather have him for a friend than any man I know."

"For a friend?" queried the older woman, coming over and joining Harriet at the hearth, having at last dismissed her maid.

"Yes," replied the girl, "I care about men as friends only, you know, and Mr. Ellis is so interesting — his work I mean — and he's so alive!"

"Oh," said Mrs. Cumloch.

"I think I never in my life saw any one with such a fresh, strong grip on the fresh, strong things of life! And it's such a pleasant change to be able to talk to a man about things that are worth while! The ordinary male animal has n't any more sense than to reserve nothing but small talk and personalities for his girl acquaintances. Now, Mr. Ellis —"

"Yes?" said her aunt with the interest that Harriet's interests always inspired in her.

"Well, what he says counts. I could never get tired of listening to him!"

Mrs. Cumloch sighed. "I wish you felt that way about George Benton."

"Oh, *George Benton*," said the girl, and a moment or two later she rose. "Good-night, Aunt Lydia,"

Patriotism and Peanuts

she said, kissing her aunt tenderly, if preoccupiedly, on the forehead.

“Good-night, dearest,” said that lady, who had been a widow a long time and had no children of her own, so that this one niece was very dear; “sleep well!” And her eyes followed the young girl’s figure.

At the door Harriet turned. “I think it might be nice to go to New York for our shopping trip, earlier than you had planned,” she said with an abruptness sometimes characteristic of her. “New York is very attractive in summer, I think.”

Miss Rand saw Ellis once more before he left the city. It was at a Saturday afternoon gathering at a certain popular club by the lake, not much outside the city limits, to which belonged a number of people who knew each other well. Harriet was pouring tea—a task that bored her—with an admirable counterfeit graciousness, and a number of men were keeping the young heiress very busy. Ellis, on the other hand, was playing tag out on the lawn with a small girl very much spoiled and very pretty—they had to be pretty, even in the infant stage, to please Verney—who belonged to the Lee Stantons. And this in spite of the fact that there were eighteen or twenty more or less just blossomed debutantes, with droopy hats and every variety of fetching costume, observing him out of the corners of their eyes from the porch, while they waited for him to speak to them. They did not look at all pleased with his method of entertaining himself.

The Politician

Harriet was probably the only girl there who was pleased, and she thought Ellis's absorption in the little girl to the exclusion of the big girls, delightfully boyish and, she imagined, characteristic. And she was right. Verney, whose restless spirit was veritable quicksilver, fagged and worn a little as he was with the strain of the convention and his duties there, found more relaxation in his game on the lawn with the child than in forcing himself through the first steps in the process of becoming acquainted with a number of people he probably would never see again. And Harriet, he saw, was very much engaged. So tea went merrily on without him, amid talk and laughter and gentle tinkling of spoon against cup, with the June sun shining gayly down on the picturesque little club-house, the crowd of people on the porch, and the big lake shimmering and sparkling not a stone's throw away.

"Who is that very good-looking young man playing with the Stanton child on the lawn?" asked a woman near Harriet.

"I really don't know," another woman replied, at first indifferently, and then with interest as she turned her eyes toward the lawn at the farthest confines of which Verney, hatless and with tie flying, was playing horse and driver with a small girl in a white dress, using her bright blue sash for reins. "I wonder who he is," she said; and the other replied, "He came with the Presbeys, I think, and some one said he was a New Yorker. But that's all I know about him." And

Patriotism and Peanuts

that was all the stir the Politician made at the Racquet and Rudder Club.

But in spite of young Miss Stanton's attempts to keep him to herself all the afternoon, he found time eventually to speak to Miss Rand. George Benton had just departed in search of tealess ones with the cup of Oolong Harriet had last poured, when Verney, opportune and fortunate as he usually was, appeared at the porch railing near which she sat.

"Won't you come down and play horse?" he said; "it's great, isn't it, Elizabeth?" looking down, as he spoke, at the little girl whose hand he clasped, both of them warm and panting from their exercise.

"Great!" she mimicked merrily; "let's play some more!"

"See," he said; "she likes it!"

"Oh, yes," smiled Harriet, "but she's a little girl!"

"And you're a big one; what's the difference?"

"Every difference in the world," she declared.

"Well, maybe; but never mind, come on and play!"

"It's a little undignified," she said, getting up, "but perhaps I will."

"You'd better," he advised; "we have some peanuts, and we'll give you some if you're good."

"Peanuts," she laughed. "Oh, that settles it then. Why didn't you tell me before?" and she joined them on the lawn, casting a hasty deprecating glance at the tea table she was deserting.

"Fine business," said Verney; "and now let's play

The Politician

horse. Elizabeth would rather be the driver, so you and I will have to be her fiery steeds."

"I want to be a fiery steed!" said Elizabeth, the spoiled one, promptly, shaking her curls at her friend.

"Of course," said he; "naturally you would, being a woman."

"But where are the peanuts?" interrupted Harriet. "You have n't given me any yet."

"Peanuts?" he repeated; "who said anything about peanuts?"

"Why, you did! You said you'd give me some if I came down," cried the girl.

"Oh, *those* peanuts!" he replied. "My dear friend, did n't you know I only said that to get you down?"

"The idea!" she said. "And you really have n't any?"

"Not one," he returned cheerfully; "you see, I was afraid you would n't come for me, and I knew peanuts would get you."

"I am fond of them; how did you know?" she laughed.

"Oh, I know everything — real curly hair when I see it, and when people don't like me, and how to put two and three together."

"Silly," she said; "but I do think you were mean about the peanuts!"

"There you see, Elizabeth," he said to the little girl trotting happily by his side — the three had strolled some distance away from the club-house — "she thinks you're mean. You should n't have deceived her!"

Patriotism and Peanuts

And the child, appreciating to the utmost the fun of this sudden transfer of responsibility to her shoulders, laughed delightedly.

They had begun with peanuts, Verney and Harriet, but they ended with Francis Bacon.

"You 'd like to read them. The whole of the philosophy of life, to my thinking, is contained in his essays," he told her as they stood on the steps of the club with Mrs. Presbey, waiting for Lawrence Presbey to bring his motor-car around. The convention was over, and it was his last day in Chicago, the last time Harriet would see him for Fate alone knew how long, since he left for New York that evening with the other delegates from that State.

"I 'd like to send you a copy of it—if I may. Good-bye," he said; and with a last firm clasp of the hand he was gone, swallowed up by the Presbey's automobile and whirled away before the girl's very eyes.

"Verney is certainly a great fellow," Lawrence Presbey remarked to his wife that evening, reaching his apartment on the Drive just in time for dinner, after seeing his brother-in-law off on the delegates' special train. "And 'pig-headed' is n't the word for his kind of obstinacy."

"Particulars, please," responded his wife; "you always assume that I know what you 're talking about, Lawrie, and half the time I don't."

"Well, you know that little Stanton girl he was playing with at the 'Racquet and Rudder' this afternoon?" explained her husband obligingly.

The Politician

"Yes," she said.

"Well, it seems Verney told the kid all about the convention and promised to get her one of the flags they 'd used in decorating, as a memento."

"Just like him!" said Verney's sister with a sort of irritation; "he 'd rather be doing something for other people than not, no matter how absurd or impossible it is."

"That's just it — it was absurd. It was all very well to promise, but as it turned out, we stayed so late at the club we did n't have time to go 'way up to the Coliseum before the train left."

"And he did n't get it?" asked Mrs. Presbey. "Too bad to disappoint the child!"

"Not at all," said her husband; "how quick you are to jump at conclusions, Cornelia. If you think a little thing like losing his train would keep him from getting that flag, you're mistaken. What do you suppose he did?"

"Oh, almost anything, from chartering an airship to get him there in time to conjuring a flag out of the sidewalk!"

"No, he insisted upon driving over to State Street and buying a flag at one of the big dry-goods stores. He said all American flags looked alike, and little Elizabeth would n't know whether it came from the Coliseum or not — all she cared about was having the flag."

"And did you go?" asked Mrs. Presbey.

"You bet we did! I argued with him in vain, told him he 'd miss his train sure, but he swore he 'd rather

Patriotism and Peanuts

do it than disappoint the child, embellishing the assertion with some of his choicest profanity — you know Verney's rather good at that — and we started off."

"He has a fine vocabulary," interrupted Mrs. Presbey. "I think he got the habit at college, and really, though I deprecate it, he's such a past master, I rather like to hear him. You can't help admiring perfection, you know, when you meet it."

"You ought to have been with me, then. My country! but we had a time. The machine was as slow as molasses getting through the crowd, and I held a stop watch on the obstinate beggar while he was in the store, with my heart in my mouth, I assure you! By George, I don't see how he possibly made it!"

"I could have told you he would," replied Mrs. Presbey. "Verney's come pretty close to it millions of times, but I don't think he ever actually missed a train in his life."

And with this unconscious commentary on a trait of her brother's character which perhaps formed its keynote,—his faculty for taking every kind of chance without any serious consequences,—the Presbeys went in to dinner.

CHAPTER III

“FOR THE HUNDREDTH TIME”

“**F**OR the hundredth time, Harriet, won't you marry me?”

The speaker was George Benton, walking beside Miss Rand on the smooth lawn of the country club at Lake Forest — very correct in his becoming riding attire and very earnest in tone.

The two had been riding an hour or more, and had stopped at the club for tea. It was Saturday afternoon, and the place was at its gayest. The polo down in the lower meadows was over, and players and spectators alike, the former conspicuous in their light-blue coats and white breeches, were engaged in the grateful occupation of assuaging a just thirst. The piazzas were thronged, and straggling lines of men and women were still trailing across the golf course toward the club-house. Out on the open stone terrace in front of the veranda at numerous small tables sat young girls in tennis costume, hair bound with ribbons pink, blue, and white, ostensibly to keep troublesome locks out of the way, but in reality for effect, talking and laughing with gilded college youths. Back under the shelter of the veranda roof, whose shade was kinder to their

“For the Hundredth Time”

years than the August sun, older women, mothers and aunts of these girls, were established in comfortable wicker chairs with teacups at their elbows, making the most of their own society, their contemporaries of the other sex having sought the seclusion of the club buffet, while here, there, and everywhere, sitting on veranda railings, hanging on the backs of chairs, in quiet corners in the club sitting-rooms, the young married women prevailed, flirting indefatigably with each other's husbands or with the coterie of young bachelors without which no married set considers itself complete. And every one, maids and matrons, with the auxiliary force of men in attendance, was sipping something.

Harriet and Benton having had their tea, iced and served in a remote corner of the piazza, and with an unfinished argument on their hands which had been raging intermittently from the moment they had started on their ride until the moment when the groom at the club had taken their horses, were walking over the lawn talking earnestly, in the direction of the tennis courts, where a fast set of men's singles was being played. Not that they had any special interest in either of the champions of the racquet whom they could see beyond the wire backstop rushing frantically about the grass court in their white clothes, like fish in a tank, shouting “deuce” and “love-forty” at each other. The fact was they were so interested in what they had to say, that they did n't care at all where they went.

Harriet was trying her best to explain to George

The Politician

Benton once for all, so that the matter should be settled beyond the shadow of a doubt, how utterly impossible it was for her to consider marrying him. Riding costume is usually becoming both to man and to woman, and it was especially so to Harriet. The simple, well-cut coat of white pique followed the long rounded lines of her slight figure with admirable fidelity, and her long graceful step revealed at intervals a fascinating shiny black riding-boot, on the side where the skirt was draped at the hip.

"Dear George," she said, looking at the young man at her side with a beautiful compassion in her Madonna eyes; "if only you would n't say that! If only I could make you see how impossible it is for me to think of such a thing! I don't know why I can't; you're so nice, so kind, so good"—they were over beyond some trees now and in no danger of being seen either from piazza or court—"but," she ended, clasping her hands almost in apology, "I can't!"

"I know! I know!" broke in Benton hurriedly; "you've told me that before, that you don't care—as I do; but what I say, what I'm asking you now is, could n't you care enough?"

Harriet's expression became troubled.

"I don't see how I can answer you that," she said; "it's so hard to know what 'enough' would be. You'd have to be married to know that, and I'm not."

They both laughed a little at that; the statement was so naive.

"I wish I could care," she went on, "just because

“For the Hundredth Time”

I think so much of you! Because we've always known each other and been friends. And I've tried to, too! I have truly, Georgie,”—she laid her hand on Benton's arm in piteous appeal,—“but it does n't seem to do any good.” He shook her hand off rather roughly. It was surprising how hard a woman could make things for a man at such times.

“I don't see why, when I feel that way about you.” His expression softened as he spoke, and his far from handsome face became almost beautiful in its tenderness. Harriet was ashamed before it; it seemed such a pity that such love should be wasted on some one who did n't want it.

“Oh, I wish you did n't,” she exclaimed desperately. “I wish I could persuade you you did n't mean it! There are so many girls in the world that are much nicer than I! I'm sure you could care about them instead, if you really tried.”

“But I won't try,” said Benton, with such impatience at the suggestion that he did n't attempt to tell her how certain he was that there were no girls in the world nicer than she. This silenced Harriet for a moment, and in silence they went on over the close-clipped grass of the golf course where they had been walking for some time.

At one of the greens labelled number seven by a red flag, they found a wooden bench and seated themselves.

“If you cared for any one else,” said Benton, “it would be different; but as long as you don't, I don't see —”

“Why I should n't marry you?” supplied Harriet.

The Politician

as he hesitated, smiling not ironically — for she could n't be unkind to any one who had been her friend so long and was even now offering her what is considered the greatest honor that it is in the power of man to bestow upon woman — but rather indulgently, as if excusing in George Benton this proof that he was not free from the egotism common to his sex, which will never permit a man to believe that a woman really means to refuse him.

“Could n't we try it on a friendly basis,” he asked. “I'm not good enough for you, I know,” he added with a real humility that was more characteristic of him than the egotism of the previous speech; “you ought to have a man with brains, a brilliant man with a career, and goodness knows I'm dull enough, slow and plodding and all that sort of thing, but I'd try awfully hard to please you, Harry!”

“I know you would, George!” murmured the girl soothingly.

“I wish I were clever and snappy and could ever *be* anything,” he went on vehemently; “perhaps you'd take me then! But I'm not; I'm not cut out to be an orator or a playwright or a hero. I could n't play the leading role in anything. I'm just a plain, everyday business man who spends his days working. And the worst of it is that I don't even have to do that.”

This was true. The usual incentive which inspires most men to work, the necessity for it, was lacking in George Benton's case. Upon the death of his parents he had inherited a substantial fortune in property, and

“For the Hundredth Time”

could have lived all his life in comfort without lifting a hand for himself, had he chosen so to do. In this property, by the way, was included the fifty-acre farm in Lake Forest some few miles west of the track, where he was spending the summer in order to be near Harriet Rand.

Yet in spite of his dissatisfaction with himself, George Benton was in every way a fine man. He had a homely face, to be sure, but it was a pleasant, healthy kind of homeliness, with his near-sighted eyes and their glasses, and his fine big nose and good color; moreover without being either brilliant or intellectual, as he had himself just admitted, he was an excellent business man. His patience and good nature made him universally liked; and though no man could praise him especially for any virtue in excess of another, no man on the other hand could criticise him for any fault pronounced enough to be called one. He was, in short, one of those conscientious, hard-working men of simple tastes upon whom a fortune is wasted, lacking as they do, the imagination required to spend one.

“I know you don’t have to work,” said Harriet, “but that’s the very reason why it’s so much to your credit that you do.”

But although this remark was eminently sensible and its truth indisputable, she was not thinking at all what she was saying when she made it. Her thoughts were far afield with a man she knew who had a career, who was brilliant and “snappy”—the kind of man George Benton had said she ought to have.

The Politician

"How about it, Harriet?" said Benton, bringing her suddenly back to earth to consider the immediate problem before her. "Aren't you going to answer my question?"

"If you mean about marrying you, I have answered it," said Harriet gently. "I told you I couldn't, George, that I'm sorry, but I can't, just as I've told you so many times before." She rose and the man did also. "I wish you'd promise not to ask me again!" she added.

"I could n't do that," he said earnestly; "you see it's the only thing in the world I want, and I must keep on asking for it. But you must n't mind; it must n't make you unhappy. I don't want you to think of me as suffering all the time. I don't — while I know that I still have a chance, you know. That's why I can't bear to have you forbid me to ask."

"I won't, then," Harriet said, tears in her voice, as they walked back to the club. That was the way it always ended; she had never been able to bring herself to deprive him of that precious hope of his. Of all the conversations they had had on this subject, this one somehow made her feel the worst. Perhaps because she had never before been so sure that she could n't marry him. But he was so loyal, so good, so devoted a friend, she did wish she did n't have to keep on hurting him.

"You see," said Benton, almost cheerfully, "I'd rather be refused by you than be accepted by any other girl! That's about the size of it. So I'm really as

“For the Hundredth Time ”

happy as I can be under the circumstances, and you must n't worry.”

He glanced solicitously at her over his glasses and Harriet was so touched by his anxiety to spare her any troubled feeling on his account that she could find no words to answer him. It was a very silent ride home.

“You've refused him again!” said Mrs. Cumloch, as Harriet came up the steps of the west veranda where her aunt was sitting. “I can see it in your face.”

“I can't help it,” returned the girl, leaning on the back of a tall chair, her eyes on the gauntlets she was drawing from her hands; “he will persist in asking me.”

“What would you expect the poor man to do, if he's unfortunate enough to be in love with you?”

“But I'm not certain that he is,” replied Miss Rand, puckering her dark brows thoughtfully. “Sometimes I think it's only just a craze with him, a sort of monomania!”

“Exactly,” said Mrs. Cumloch, provokingly; “that's all love ever is, a monomania. At least until it becomes a duomania! You've described it with great accuracy for a girl who has never felt the fatal passion herself.”

“You know what I mean,” said Harriet; “I mean with George, his feeling for me is more a matter of habit than anything else. He always has had this notion he cares about me, so he always will continue to have it! Following out Spencer's law of persistence, you know, that what has endured long enough to have a history will always endure.”

The Politician

"Well," said her aunt, "I don't know whether it's your fault or Spencer's, but I don't seem to get any new idea on the subject yet."

Harriet seated herself slowly and gracefully in the chair she had been leaning upon and pointed her riding crop at Mrs. Cumloch pedagogically.

"It's this way," she said. "What I think is that if George had only given it up long ago when I first told him I would n't, and if he had gone with other girls, it's more than likely that he would have forgotten all about this obsession of his in regard to me and fallen in love with some one else."

Nothing irritated Mrs. Cumloch more than Harriet's casting aspersions on the genuineness of the young man's attachment to her. She thought it positively stupid in the face of his ten years' devotion.

"A very original and ingenious theory, I'm sure," she said drily, "and one that does credit to your intelligence. One would never suppose that you were twenty-four years old and had been proposed to dozens of times before."

"But Aunt Lydia," protested Harriet, shaking her head earnestly, "I really do feel that way about it. You remember how it all started? He had the measles, and while he was convalescing his mother used to ask me to come over and read to him and amuse him, and I did; and once I believe I was rash enough to bring him some violets."

"Yes, I know, but what does that prove?"

"Nothing," said Harriet; "only that we came to



“Didn’t you even tell your best friend, when they proposed?”

“For the Hundredth Time”

know each other better than ever, though we'd always known each other, and he became sort of used to seeing so much of me, and that's where he acquired his idea that he cares for me. He caught it along with the measles.”

“Very clever, I'm sure,” said Mrs. Cumloch, satirically. Benton was a great favorite of hers, and Harriet's refusal to marry him was a sore trial. She was an ardent believer in the dogma that money should marry money. “Very clever,” she repeated; “and yet I should never think, myself, of ascribing a man's love to such a cause as that. Measles, indeed!”—indignantly —“really, Harriet, if you're going to be so absurd, you must excuse me if I continue to read my book.” And she resumed the volume she had put down upon the appearance of her niece.

Harriet laughed half-heartedly, as her aunt's partiality for Benton was well known to her.

“Well, I don't care,” she said; “it *was* the measles that did it, I'm sure.” Then, as she went into the house, “I'm going to telephone Pauline Wright to come over for dinner and spend the night, if you don't mind?”

“You always telephone for Pauline Wright whenever you've refused poor George!” replied Mrs. Cumloch. “I'm sure I don't see why. It's bad enough to refuse him without talking about it. We had finer notions of honor when I was a girl.”

“Didn't you even tell your best friend, when they proposed?” said Harriet, coming back to lean over her

The Politician

aunt's chair and put her arms about Mrs. Cumloch's shoulders; "just one other girl?"

"Well, perhaps, just one," said the older woman, smiling against her will at her niece's "they."

"I knew you did!" said Harriet, running back into the house, and presently Mrs. Cumloch heard her at the telephone.

That evening, just as Mrs. Cumloch had predicted, Harriet told Pauline Wright, who had accepted the invitation to spend the night, all about it.

"Isn't it a shame!" she ended; "I do wish he would n't! I feel it's just a good man gone to waste, you know, Polly, and I do like him so well, so much, that I should like him to be happy."

Pauline Wright, a slim little girl with ash-brown hair, serious blue eyes and such a sweet expression that no one realized that she was n't especially pretty, nodded her head assentingly.

"It is too bad," she said; "George is such a nice fellow." She, too, had known Benton all her life. She was the daughter of a physician in Lake Forest, a girl of great character and luxurious tastes, who had never in her life known what it was to have enough pocket money, and to whom economy was as daily bread.

She and Benton and Harriet with young Francis Morton had made up a "foursome" of young people who had gone everywhere and done everything together, from their childhood up.

"Now you and he, for instance," Harriet went on, beginning to brush out her hair — she had come into

“For the Hundredth Time”

her guest's room for a talk before they went to bed — “you 'd make an awfully good pair. I'm disappointed with George that he does n't see it that way.”

Pauline smiled, without resenting Harriet's failure to consider her wishes in the matter, nor did the remark seem egotistical or patronizing to her. She knew Harriet Rand well enough to know that though she might discuss with an old friend an affair of the kind sometimes when she needed advice, it was utterly foreign to her noble nature, which knew no petty vanity, to boast of her conquests, and she easily believed that Harriet was sincere in thinking it as likely for Benton to have become interested in her, Polly Wright, as in a beauty and an heiress.

“But he does n't,” she replied, equably, and so evenly that if for her part she too had wished that it were she, not Harriet Rand, that the young man was interested in, no one would have been able to tell it from her tone.

“I wish you had had a chance to talk to Mr. Ellis the other night,” said Harriet presently, coming round last to the subject that was first in her thoughts. “He is the most interesting man I've ever met! He does things, you know, goes in for politics and things like that.”

“I wish I had. Francis Morton said he thought you were crazy about him,” returned Polly. She fixed a grave, considering look upon her friend, a little quiver of eagerness about her mouth as if she were anxious for Harriet's reply.

“Francis is never accurate in his judgments,” Har-

The Politician

riet answered deliberately. "I'm not 'crazy about him'—to use the vernacular—at all. I only like him. You know I am never 'crazy' about any one."

"Well, you know you did sit out on the porch with him all the evening when the rest of us were playing bridge."

"So I did, but that does n't prove anything. We talked about his work, about politics, every single minute." Harriet finished arranging the big bow of pink ribbon with which she had been busy tying up her hair, as she spoke. "Let's go to bed," she added.

"Oh, did you?" commented Miss Wright, in reference to Harriet's information that she had only talked politics with the fascinating Mr. Ellis; and though her voice was cheerful enough, a slight trace of disappointment might have been observed in her face as she bade her friend good-night.

CHAPTER IV

POLITICS AND LETTERS

THAT Verney Ellis should have become interested in politics was not at all as unnatural a thing or as inexplicable a taste as his sister, Mrs. Lawrence Presbey, would have had people think. A slave herself, more or less, to custom and habit, and much influenced by the authority of precedent, it was difficult for her to conceive why her brother should be drawn to that kind of life when there had never been a politician in the family before. The Ellises had, almost all of them, been professional men; and inasmuch as Verney had his law business, his own shingle independent of his father's firm, to occupy him, it seemed strange to her that he should wish to "mix up" with politics when there were plenty of people, she was sure, who were ready and willing to do the country's "dirty work"; and that, by the way, was all that politics meant to her. But in summing up the case in this fashion she failed to reckon with the surplus store of energy with which her brother was endowed, which did not find sufficient outlet in his law business, and which was always inciting him to seek some new direction of effort.

Her own existence as Cornelia Ellis of 7 West Twelfth

The Politician

Street, New York City, had been so stereotyped, so much a duplicate of Winifred's (her older married sister), in its prescribed routine, from the days when she attended a private school on Fifth Avenue in short skirts to the moment when she married Lawrence Presbey, a young man of means from Chicago, that it was quite beyond her powers of comprehension to grasp why her brother's existence should not be equally conventional and circumscribed. Why he should not be content with debutante teas and the conservative, aristocratic practice of law, exclusive of any greater ambition, she could not understand. Verney's father and mother also held views in regard to his going into politics, very similar to those of Mrs. Presbey. But although this lack of sympathy hurt the young man, to whose warm and expansive nature sympathy was very dear, it in no wise militated against the strength of his set purpose or altered his determination to enter a field which he believed offered him a wider sphere of usefulness. It only resulted in his keeping his ambitions to himself and in its becoming an understood thing that politics was a forbidden subject in his home.

Not that his father — senior member of a law firm of excellent and long-established reputation — had any violent feeling of antagonism toward a political career as such; but he was an old man and had of late years lost a great deal of property in one way and another, so that his resources were greatly reduced, which made it a matter of necessity almost that his youngest son should support himself, where his two older sons, Clinton and

Politics and Letters

Benjamin, at Verney's age had had only a moral obligation to work. And, of course, as every one knows and Verney knew too, there's no money to be made in politics where patriotism is the only motive for entering that field; though equally, of course, as much money may be spent as a man pleases to spend. On the other hand, Verney had a well-started law practice that his brilliance and talent were expanding every day, which would undoubtedly suffer if he divided his interests and gave half his time to politics. As for his mother's prejudice in the matter, it amounted to nothing more than a conservative feeling that a family as ancient and well known as the Ellises should never on any account make itself conspicuous; and to her, politics and publicity meant one and the same thing.

After a few years' practice in his profession, to which he had devoted himself, as he did to everything, with his whole heart and soul, Verney had suddenly conceived the idea that he was not doing his full duty by either city or State or country in not interesting himself in the machinery of government. This awakening to a sense of responsibility in the matter was brought about partly through his friendship with a man a few years older than himself, who was a graduate of the same college and a member, as he was, of Squadron A, namely Oliver Ordway, for whom Verney had a great admiration and who had long been interested in politics. Ordway, as leader of the Twelfth Election District, to which both men belonged, had often asked Verney to assist him in his work at election time, and was very glad to

The Politician

accept the young man's permanent assistance when Verney made offer of it. Young Ellis had therefore plunged into politics with a glutton's appetite for work, like an engine which has been running at half speed, upon suddenly discovering all its latent power. To be sure, the scope afforded by the affairs of the Twelfth Election District, which was only a subdivision of the Twenty-sixth Assembly District, was small, but it was not long before his influence was felt, which made it the most natural thing in the world that he should be chosen leader in his friend's stead when Ordway himself had been moved up a place.

After that it would have been easier to extract a burr from a sheep's back or remove a barnacle from a rock than to coax Ellis to give up politics. If his attempts to "clean out" a "rotten gang," which a little later had secured control of his Assembly District had not been sufficiently interesting to keep him to his purpose, and if the tremendous fascination of the game (for game it is in many senses) — the exhilaration of contest with men, the matching of brains, and the constant revelation of human nature which it invoked — had had no charm for him, Ellis's original reason for going in would have been sufficient to insure his constancy. For his highly proper belief that men of character should enter politics even at a personal sacrifice, rather than leave the reins of government to men of no ideals and corrupt and unscrupulous methods, was, after all, the mainspring of his enthusiasm.

But of course a man of his spirit, with his keen zest

Politics and Letters

for novelty and change, could not but appreciate and enjoy the excitement which the life offered and the chance for obtaining power and place as well as the increased opportunities for wielding a salutary influence. He was only human, after all, and though he had entered the lists, as it were, with motives of the most exalted character and with no thought of personal aggrandizement, as the possibilities of the conflict opened out before him and the smoke of battle compassed him about, he could not but realize that with the fighting came spoil for the victor and that prizes and guerdon were to be had for the winning, and that they might as well be won by himself as by another less honest. His taking this into account, however, did not affect his principles or his ambition to do right. Nothing could affect these; for even had the integrity of the young man in itself been at fault, two guiding spirits invoked by him watched over his career. For Verney, though thirty-one that June, at the time of the convention, was still young enough to be something of a hero-worshipper; and in his room at 7 West Twelfth Street — a remarkable apartment, by the way, if taken as an index of character — two portraits hung as inspiration and example, under which the Politician burned incense.

One was a painting of Napoleon Bonaparte, arms folded, chin on breast, brooding, unsatisfied eyes, and brow dark with ambition and hate of the world he could not quite conquer, yet, above all else, *great*; the other was a portrait of Abraham Lincoln, rugged-faced, sorrowful-eyed, and homely, but *great* also, though with

The Politician

a greatness to which selfish ambition was a stranger, and who loved the world and his fellow-men better than he loved himself. There was nothing that Ellis did not know about the life of each, fascinated as he was by the tremendous achievements of the one — that unsurpassed egotist whose despotic will, coupled with a consuming love of power, had raised him to an eminence rarely equalled in history — and by the exalted character of the other — that selfless soul who had no ambition save to serve his country, who sought no reward for serving it but his country's good, whose patriotism was a beacon-light to the patriots of history. And only Verney — confessed patriot, unconfessed disciple of ambition — knew under which portrait he stood the oftenest, burned the most incense.

Yet although he went into politics hoping that with the entry of every man of his class and stamp the general average of politicians might be raised to a higher standard, and although it was his intention to see that some methods and practices of which he disapproved were done away with; in short, though he was in every instance governed by principle, he was *not* a “political reformer” in the generally accepted sense of the phrase. He was not, in a word, what is styled a “new school” reformer. He did not believe in direct primaries; that is, in choosing candidates for office by direct vote of the people instead of through conventions; he did not believe in the abolition of political organizations. Firm in his conviction that the government of his country was a party government, he, like many able men in public

Politics and Letters

life, believed that the true secret of reform lay not in abolishing political organizations, but in improving or reforming them. The method of achieving these ends he thought lay in giving the organizations as leaders men of ideals and morals as well as ability, so that the organizations might be strong and efficient and yet the machinery of government not be perverted to the selfish uses of unpatriotic and corrupt men.

He was convinced that universal suffrage, and the indifference of people, and their lack of knowledge of political affairs, provided the reason and necessity for party government. He was all the more impressed with this because in the city in which he lived many thousands of voters were foreigners with modes of thought and life absolutely different from American manners and customs, with no ideas of the principles or methods of American government — ignorant, suspicious, and easily led. While he realized that when the attention of the public was centred upon some one issue of vital importance, particularly if it involved a moral question, the people at large could be relied upon to reach right conclusions, he believed that in general, ordinary people had neither time nor inclination to attend to their own political affairs, and that they must be guided and their opinions created, by political parties which were permanent and responsible, whose leaders made politics, so to speak, their business.

While, during a presidential election, the average man might not be able to avoid absorbing some knowledge and perhaps even an intelligent opinion of the candi-

The Politician

dates of the great parties, the number of men who gave more attention to the batting average of their favorite baseball hero than to the character of the candidates for whom they voted constituted in Verney's mind a large majority. To place in the hands of such persons the selection of a large number of candidates, a task which could be intelligently performed only by a careful consideration of the fitness of each of the candidates for the different offices, involving both personal knowledge of the candidates and acquaintance with the duties of the offices, was in his opinion impracticable.

However liable to abuse conventions were, through manipulation and control by party bosses, he believed that the selection of candidates by conventions resulted in a more intelligent choice. He was a sufficiently experienced and clear-seeing politician to detect many practical difficulties in all the proposed and existing schemes for direct primaries, and to foresee the many evils to which they were likely to lead, some of which were in his opinion greater than the evils of the existing system. He believed in the selection of candidates by conventions composed of delegates directly representing the people, and felt that to secure the selection in the party organization and in the convention, of men of clean purpose and good judgment, was the point to be aimed at in improving present conditions. In this sense he was as much and as ardent a reformer as any of the young dreamers coming to the fore all the time, who expected to make over politics at a bound, who were for "stern duty" only, and who talked very loudly about

Politics and Letters

“corruption” and the “evils of politics.” “Organization,” like the “Onward and Upward” of the Salvation Army, was the watchword of his political faith, and without organization he believed that nothing could be done.

Yet, though he had ideals as well as these avowed reformers, or “extremists” as he called them, he did not any the less hesitate to “play the game as it was played,” though perhaps the extremists would in many instances have considered his methods unworthy. But that was just the difference between their kind of reform and Ellis’s. They were idealists, and he was a man with ideals, which admitted of his being other things besides — a believer in common sense, for one thing. He was keen enough and man enough to realize in playing his cards that the elements he had most to deal with were self-interest and human weakness, and that in order to get men to do what he wanted them to do, he must play upon their selfish motives and interests. And he very often did.

An incident illustrating this practical side of Verney’s politics happened one evening in connection with one of the thirty captains of the Election Districts within his Assembly District. When Verney, as leader of the District, first asked those thirty men to take up the work as captains, he did not ask them to do it on moral or altruistic grounds. He did tell them, to be sure, that he believed they would be performing a duty and that they would find the work interesting; but he urged them particularly to do it because, he said, if they worked well

The Politician

enough and long enough, they might expect to have come to them increase of salary, promotion, appointments, additional business, or some material gain directly or indirectly. On the night in question, a captain walked in where Verney was sitting at his headquarters, and presented to him his resignation. The Politician immediately asked the captain whether he was in any way dissatisfied with his, Verney's management, or what other reason he had for resigning. While the young fellow was answering, Verney recollected that the captain's brother, who held a government position, had failed to secure a promotion which he had desired and that the captain himself some time before had been disappointed in not receiving some business from a semi-political source, which he had expected. Recognizing at once by this token the kind of material he was dealing with, and determined not to lose the man's services, which had been valuable to the young leader, Ellis did not waste any time in urging the captain to remain in his position for the reason that it was his duty, or on philanthropic grounds. He continued sharpening his pencil, a process interrupted for a moment by the captain's entrance, and fixing the malcontent with a steady blue gaze, remarked with careful casualness:

"I wonder if you've considered the fact that if some plans which are being formed are successful, there will be next year in the Executive Chamber a Governor whose attitude toward the active members of the organization will be different from that of the present Governor? You have worked long and hard as captain; I would n't

Politics and Letters

give up now if I were you, but hang on a while longer; go through this next campaign and see what happens."

He ended his remarks with one of the true Verney smiles, which at the instant of their inception made all men his. Whereupon the captain, smiling too, thoughtfully tore up his resignation; and Verney said, "Come on out and have a drink."

And that was all there was to that.

But the characteristic that most fitted Ellis to be what he was, a politician of rapidly growing importance, was simply his stupendous capacity for hard work. When, after two years of ceaseless activity as captain of his little District, he was made successively a member of the New York County Committee, a member of the Legislature, and finally leader of his Assembly District, he became known throughout New York City and influential in his party throughout the State. That same remarkable energy and thoroughness, and that infinite capacity for taking pains which had characterized his conduct as captain of his little District, characterized his administration of the succeeding offices he filled. As this spirit inspired him then to become personally acquainted with each one of the five or six hundred voters the little District contained, so that he might feel assured he knew exactly what each one of them would do and how he was going to vote (which invariably resulted in his turning out the largest registration and the largest vote in proportion to the size of his District at election times), it inspired him later at Albany, when he was made assemblyman, in his work of getting bills he ap-

The Politician

proved of passed. He worked on them to the limit of his strength, considering nothing too much trouble to do that would help in any way, and forced himself to talk on the floor, although by a contradiction in his character and in spite of his undoubted ability in speaking, he was shy about being the centre of attention. He had won recognition from the chair and from other assemblymen, time and again, where few men much older than he had been able to do so.

It was this aptitude for hard work too, combined with his great personal charm, tact, and brains, which with each year of office increased the scope of his activities; and having signalized his first year in the House by the introduction of an unusual number of important bills, he grew with the succeeding years to be regarded as one of its strong men, and was always appointed to the important committees; and in his fourth and last year, although the youngest member, he became not only one of the big men of the Assembly, but one of the first four or five in it. He had been, in short, as a result of the hardest and most conscientious kind of work, successful so far as he had gone.

Now, even the strongest man, and Ellis was strong, cannot use his strength to capacity limits day in and day out without feeling it a little; and the hardest thing the young man had to bear in this busy, complicated, successful life of his was the reckoning day that faced him at intervals, when a mild form of nervous breakdown, compelled him to doff his armor for a while and give himself up to the heart-wearying inaction which

Politics and Letters

the doctor decreed as the only way to get well again. Loss of sleep, necessitated by his efforts to pay attention to his law business and his political interests too, was the chief cause of his disorder, augmented not a little by the number of cigars he smoked and the amount of alcoholic stimulant he found it necessary to take as a substitute for sleep.

In commenting upon this state of affairs, his uncle Richmond, who was a bachelor of forty-eight, and who thought the sun, moon, and stars revolved about his nephew Verney, had often asked him why he worked so hard and followed everything out to such minute detail, vouchsafing it as his opinion that every one else loafed more or less, and that it was foolish for Verney not to do the same, and Ellis had replied: "Because if I have anything to accomplish I will not take any chances with it. To gain my end I must try every possible expedient, and I must attend to every detail I can think of, however unimportant it may seem, and experience has proved to me that the policy never fails to pay."

Verney had been in New York just a week when he received a letter from Chicago addressed in a feminine hand which he had never seen before but knew at once. Of course it was Miss Rand writing to thank him for the promised copy of "Bacon's Essays," which he had sent her immediately upon his return to his own city. It was only proper that she should do so; yet he opened the envelope which a club servant handed him — he was lunching that day at the Princeton Club — with a feeling almost impatient that his little courtesy should have

The Politician

put her to the trouble of a formal acknowledgment. He would almost have expected Harriet Rand to regard her thanks as a thing understood and to accept the inconsiderable gift in silence. But when he had read the letter he was glad that she had allowed the conventions to rule her after all. It was an interesting letter, chiefly on the subject of the reading she had done recently; and her opinion of the essays was a thing of joy to Verney. Almost every other girl he knew would have raved about each separate one as a matter of duty, with little discrimination; but Miss Rand had dared to be critical, even though she knew the high regard in which he held them himself, and had frankly admitted that she found them difficult to understand. She wrote:

“I must confess that although I very much like your friend Francis Bacon and am deeply in your debt for introducing him to me, I found him at times a little difficult to grasp; that is, at once. This one emanation of his intellect, written, as he says in the preface, ‘in his leisure moments,’ has commanded the whole of mine in appreciating it. But I do not lay this up against him, for I always enjoy most the nut that’s hardest to crack. Does that sound like the epigrammatical gentleman himself? Or do I flatter myself? But my mind is a veritable sponge for absorbing the style of the different authors I read. If it happens to be Ibsen, my conversation is terse and bloodless for days; if the dear Jane Austen, I find myself garrulous beyond belief! Wouldn’t you hate to meet me just after a dose of Henry James? But to return to His Lordship. I like the essay entitled ‘Of Truth’ and the one on ‘Great Place’ and the ones on ‘Ambition’ and ‘Honor and Reputation’; but the one I particularly dote upon is ‘Friendship.’ That I abhor and detest and indignantly refute the ones on ‘Love’ and on ‘Marriage’ goes without saying. You could hardly expect me to attach the seal of my approval to such abominable cynicisms—now, could

Politics and Letters

you? What a cross wife he must have had, to inspire such misogynic utterances! And how terribly selfish of her to indulge her bad temper! If she had had a true sense of her responsibilities he would never have been able to visit his displeasure over her shortcomings upon the innocent heads of all womankind!"

Verney smiled as he read that, and turning over the page, saw with pleasure that the letter was a long one. After further comment on the book and on other reading she had done, she took up another matter, her receipt of a picture from him — his photograph. This gift had followed "Bacon's Essays" very shortly as a result of a little passage at arms which occurred the evening he had dined at Mrs. Cumloch's, when that lady had shown her friends, in a spirit of amusement, a picture of Harriet which had appeared in the "society column" of a newspaper. Verney had appropriated it at once, as much perhaps to tease the girl as for anything else, and though much importuned by Harriet, had refused to restore it. To justify which rather doubtful conduct he had sent her his in fair exchange. Verney grinned appreciatively though a trifle sheepishly at Miss Rand's comment upon his arbitrary and novel method of making restitution. She went on to say:

"Thanks vastly for the picture; it's a counterfeit presentment of you, of course; but counterfeit or not, I shall cherish it, though it is not at all a proper equivalent for the picture you purloined. You know very well that a handsome photograph is not a fair exchange for a newspaper picture. But how exactly like you just to send it without a word! So very modest and casual-like! As if you were an agent trying to introduce a new brand of pickles! No advertising matter or testimonials with

The Politician

our samples! They speak for themselves! You wouldn't have told me it was coming for worlds, would you?"

Verney had to laugh at this. What acumen, what penetration the girl showed, anyway! How accurately she had divined his reason for making as little as possible of the matter, his fear that he might be accused of vanity! But how else should he have done it, for Heaven's sake? he wondered. Did she think he'd send it to her in a gilt frame with "yours ever" on it, like any schoolboy? He rather thought not; a grown man did things like that without shouting about it. And yet for all that, the Verney who had stolen the picture of Harriet in the first place was not so much like a grown man as he fancied he was, but much more like the schoolboy he had repudiated! There was a boyishness about Vernor Ellis that many years and much sorrow would have a hard time to conquer.

In summing up her thanks for both gifts, Harriet said:

"I think, on the whole, that of the two books you sent me—the one bound in Russia calf and the one without any binding, Bacon's Essays and the picture of yourself,—I prefer the book that is not yet finished, the leaves of which are still uncut, its story still to write, and the title of which is 'James Vernor Ellis, Politician.' Am I not right? Isn't politics the noblest career open to man, and isn't the man who is succeeding in that career most to be envied? But I see that I am thrusting you upon a pedestal without even so much as a by-your-leave! Do you like it? Or do pedestals bore you?"

Having reached which satisfactory confession—the very frankness of which prevented Verney from misin-

Politics and Letters

terpreting it in any way, frankness being the essence of friendship,— she closed with a remark to the effect that she and her aunt thought of going on to New York for a while before the summer was over to do some shopping and see some people they knew; and in ending she was his “very sincere friend.”

Verney liked the letter, he liked it a great deal, in fact he hardly remembered ever having received a letter from a girl that pleased him more; and inspired by this conviction he betook himself at once to a writing-room and dashed off a note in reply. He said:

“My very kind friend, you would spoil me by what you say to me if I did not know you laughed a little in that kind way of yours as you said it, and I should ask you not to put me on a pedestal if I did not know that you had no intention of putting me there. There *are* heroes in politics, for in that arena those who love the bright face of danger have as big a chance and take as many risks as sailor or soldier. But I’m not one of them; I’m only a worker. Yet I say ‘only’ with pride, for ‘I love the dust the heroes raise in striving,’ and of course there’s always the possibility that I may strive hard enough to raise some myself some day. But I don’t think I’d like to be on a pedestal even if I could. It might be awfully lonely, I think, up so high—unless of course I could persuade somebody awfully nice to come up there with me! It’s bully that you’re coming to New York for a while! Hurry up and come! Bacon is a good fellow, isn’t he? I was as sure when I sent him to you that you and he would compare notes favorably on this and that, as that you would disagree vitally on the subjects you mention. Naturally you could n’t swallow his ‘love and marriage’; you wouldn’t be as human and likeable as you are if you could. Do you mind my saying that your letter as a commentary on what you have read is a wonder?”

“Faithfully,

“JAMES VERNOR ELLIS.”

The Politician

Which, as a letter to a young and attractive member of the other sex, was about as discreet as Verney ever was. He never chose his words or stayed the warmth of impulse for any fear that more significance would be attached to them than he intended. He complimented womankind, whether unduly or not they alone could tell — for Verney was never enlightened on the subject if they could help it,—by assuming that they were able to keep as heart-whole as he, and by feeling free to express his admiration or interest or friendship, just as you like to call it, without danger of misinterpretation. In a singularly ingenuous and joyous way he took it for granted that their intelligence was equal to the task of discerning at once that his interest in each particular case was the interest of a man who believed that the more charming women a man knew the better off he was, and who made no secret of the fact that he was fortunate enough to know a great many. But in the question whether he over-complimented them or not lay the possible weak spot in this otherwise admirable attitude, an attitude in which he should really have been quite justified, if its success had not been dependent upon that most variable and uncertain of qualities, a woman's ability to remain impersonal at will.

But while it was to some extent due to his under-rating the susceptibility of woman and his own powers of pleasing, one other factor that figured largely in Verney's sense of freedom from responsibility in this regard and had kept him up to the present time unscathed by the fires of love, was his resolve taken some

Politics and Letters

seven years previously to abandon all thoughts of marriage. This he had done in order that he might pursue his work in politics with singleness of purpose, and he believed that course necessary for many reasons. Considering the question of marriage for a man engaged in politics from the practical point of view of whether or not it was to the man's advantage to marry, Verney was of the opinion that it was not.

Setting aside the risk a man ran in getting a wife who would not or could not help, who was perhaps too selfish to interest herself in her husband's work or too much of an invalid to be able to do so, he thought the assistance a woman might give in the way of social entertaining, or financially, if she were rich, was more than counterbalanced by the obligation any right-minded man would be under to spend as much of his time as he could at home; for in Verney's estimation a man engaged in politics has no time to spend at home! Then, again, he thought that the social side of a political career did not count for as much as it was supposed to count, that it was not, in short, a necessity. While it might figure largely in the case of a man who had reached the top of the political ladder, the young politician thought it figured only microscopically in the case of a man like himself, who was just beginning his career. The political game he felt, anyway, was difficult and uncertain enough without mixing up with the social game, and he believed that oftentimes politics was as much the means of advancing a woman in society as society was the means of advancing a man in politics.

The Politician

Then, too, in his own case, if his wife were not rich and the whole burden of supplying her wants would rest upon his shoulders, he did not feel equal to the task; not, that is, if he were to spend part of his time in politics, where he knew he would have to spend money rather than make it. Girls wanted so much nowadays, it took all a man's time in his opinion to support them in luxury, except of course the happy mortal who was born rich — and Verney was not the kind of man to want to support his wife in any other way! It was to him as if he said: "To marry, caring as I do for politics, would be like committing bigamy. It would be as wrong, for if I did not abandon either interest I could give only half a heart to each."

It was that very ambition to be just and fair that convinced the young man that marriage was not for him, since he could accomplish that end only by giving up his beloved work; for the idea of asking a woman to sacrifice her rights to her husband's duty and society that he might gratify his ambitions appeared to him as beyond the realm of things possible. So that his resolution to remain single was to his mind more a matter of necessity than choice. His friend Ordway's experience had made it clear to him, too, that the fact that a man had money did not alter the case, did not, in other words, affect the problem of his neglecting his wife if he remained in politics. The young man was married, he was in politics, and he was wealthy; yet though his means prevented his wife, a very beautiful and intelligent girl, from actually coming to want, she was nevertheless

Politics and Letters

neglected, for she was left almost constantly to herself owing to the demands made upon her husband's time by his public life.

This was true to such an extent, indeed, that it had resulted in driving her to the practice of going about to the theatre and to dinners and dances with other men. They were, to be sure, usually young men whom she had known before her marriage, and she was able to explain the thing sufficiently to her friends by laughing remarks to the effect that her husband "was so busy, so devoted to politics," that she hardly "saw anything of him"; but it was for all that a dangerous practice and a state of affairs that was not at all fair or just to her. The fact that she did not realize the pathos of her position, her loss of what was hers by right, her husband's time and society, but comforted herself by rejoicing in his prominence and success and in priding herself upon knowing as much about politics as he, holding up English wives as a model in this respect for their American sisters to copy, did not make it any the less true that she was a neglected wife. And Verney realized this, had plenty of opportunity to realize it, knowing the Ordways as well as he did. It was, indeed, before him as an example almost every day of his life, for he saw a great deal of his friend, and engaged as they often were in the same work, was in a position to know just how little time he was able to spend at home. And then — and this was the best proof of all — he had himself helped Agnes Ordway to pass some of those dull evenings when Oliver was away.

The Politician

If this state of things could exist, if his absorption in politics made it impossible for a man to give a proper amount of his time to his wife when the man in question was relieved of the necessity of providing for her, how much more likely was it to exist in the case of a man who was not relieved of that necessity, who had to stock a larder and pay the month's rent? It was not only likely that it should exist, but it was inevitable, and Verney's second older brother, Benjamin, illustrated the fact admirably. He was headmaster of a leading boys' school in Connecticut, with a small salary and five children; and when Verney visited him, the engrossing nature of domestic responsibility never failed to come home to Verney with its full force. There were so many, many things that Benjamin had to do! He had so little time to himself! Why, as long as Verney could remember, his brother had been trying to finish a text-book he had begun to compile the year of his marriage — ten years ago,— and had not finished yet! For such a man to have thought of entering politics, unless he deserted wife and children, was absurd. And this proof of the incompatibility of domestic life with a career of the kind, even more than that which the experience of his friend Ordway supplied, was an object lesson to Verney; for Verney, like his brother, was not a rich man.

With such strong evidence before him that human responsibility is a curb to ambition, was it strange that Ellis at so early an age had waved a gay farewell to Matrimony beckoning down the road? And was it

Politics and Letters

strange that a feeling of freedom from the obligation to hold himself to account for word and deed which is usually felt toward women by a man of principle should have resulted from that act? Not that he thought any the less of the blessings of matrimony or decried it in its proper place, but he could not help seeing its impracticability in politics, where a man must give all his time, every breathing moment that he is awake, to his work; and though he did not quite agree with the maxim that "a young man married is a young man marred," he had come to regard the blissful state with such disfavor where a politician is concerned, that whenever any of the young captains in his district took unto himself a wife, their leader was wont to shake his head gloomily and regard that man as lost, so far as getting more work out of him went.

If Harriet Rand was to be one of those instances, which doubtless had occurred in Verney's experience, when his confidence in the perspicacity of women had been at fault, what a pity it was that some clear-sighted arbiter who knew the rules of the game could not have explained to her that afternoon two days later in Lake Forest, as she broke the seal of the letter with "Princeton Club" on it in orange lettering, just how things stood with the young man and of his happy ignorance of his responsibility in such matters, while it was yet time! Or what a pity it was that she had missed the significance of Verney's gift to her of "Bacon's Essays," that she should have failed to recognize the unconscious warning contained in the young politician's admiration of

The Politician

the great philosopher whose writings all teach his belief in the age-old argument that matrimony is an enemy to art, as applied to every kind of public life!

But nobody did explain, and the warning embodied in Verney's gift had passed by her unread, so that there was no disturbing element to interfere with her enjoyment of his letter. She read it through once slowly, and then again, standing where the maid who had brought it to her found her in the middle of her aunt's Italian garden, where she had been amusing herself trimming a boxwood hedge under the direction of the gardener. Shears in hand, garden hat fallen to her shoulders and held only by its strings, she walked toward the house — boxwood hedge and waiting gardener forgotten — to seek in her room a pigeon-hole in a rosewood desk which might be immediately consecrated to the guardianship of the missive in her hand and of any others like it that might come her way. . . . What a wonderful thing it was to know a man in public life, to be friends with a politician!

CHAPTER V

“HERE WE ARE, CORA!”

THAT part of June which was left after the convention and the month following were hard weeks for Verney. His primary fights at former elections had been noted for their bitterness, but nothing he had done in the past could equal the energy and singleness of purpose with which he worked now to convert the feeling of dissatisfaction with Downes's administration, already beginning to gain ground in New York city, into a feeling in favor of his friend Ordway, for Republican nominee for Governor. His law business suffered sadly these days, but little by little, inch by inch, by means known only to the expert politician, he had succeeded in establishing to a certain degree the young speaker's name in men's mouths, had at last been able to start the current of party sentiment toward him. It was slow work, though, and he had achieved little more than that by the end of July, when an interesting political situation was precipitated by Governor Downes's announcement that he would accept a renomination at the hands of the Republican party if it were offered to him.

Whereupon the sluggishness, the indecision, the uncertainty which had been characterizing the Republican

The Politician

party vanished like smoke, before the thrown gauntlet of this news, and divided itself upon the instant into two factions,—the men who were for Downes and the men who were against him. Of these factions one was composed chiefly of the main body of voters, the men who take no part in political affairs except to vote; and the other chiefly of the politicians or members of the organization, the men who are active in politics, who are responsible for the conduct of elections and the political machinery.

It was with the latter, of course, that Verney, as an organization man and because of his personal prejudice against the Governor, identified himself. The reasons that caused him and his fellow-politicians to disagree with the Downes supporters were based on many grounds. It seemed to them that those who belonged to that faction “leaned so far over backward,” as the expression went, in their desire to keep public office free from evil political influences that they had come to think that discrimination in making appointments should be made against every political recommendation and every man who had been active in party affairs, irrespective of his ability. They believed also that those men followed blindly the sensational newspaper clamor and the popular wave of anti-corporation feeling in which every corporation was a trust and every trust was bad, and applauded every detail of Governor Downes’s limitations upon insurance companies and his regulation of the railroads, however drastic they might be.

The politicians believed, on the other hand, that party

“Here We Are, Cora!”

service and political recommendation were entitled to consideration. They realized the necessity under changed economic conditions of governmental regulation where competition no longer existed, and of governmental regulation of public utility corporations, but they believed that supervision might be overdone if, for instance, as had recently happened, through its means a great railroad could be sent to the wall and millions of people inconvenienced by the curtailment of its services. They believed, in short, that the State was riding too fast over untried roads; that it had gone far enough in radical experiment; that slower and more cautious ways should be taken; and that it was wiser to wait before giving further power to commissions which had not yet accomplished in a year, or made any progress toward accomplishing, the reforms they had set out to effect. They feared also the results of the unrestricted power which this placed in the hands of one man, whose right it was to make the appointments to these commissions.

Of all these reasons for opposing Downes's renomination, however, the one that appeared most important in their eyes was the Governor's hostile attitude toward the organization itself. To judge by that system of his, so approved by his partisans, of making appointments which discriminated against party workers and men active in politics, and his violent advocacy of the direct system of selecting candidates for nomination which every politician considered inimical to the Republican organization, he seemed to believe that in the destruction of organization lay the only hope of obtaining civil

The Politician

service reform. To Verney, who believed — whether the majority of the politicians cherished similar ideals or not — that the way to effect reform was by means of reforming the party, not by destroying its organization, since in his estimation a party government was essential to the welfare of the country, this attitude of Downes was alone reason enough for fighting against his re-nomination.

From the moment Downes's willingness to run again for Governor became known, Verney's desire that Oliver Ordway, who was a member of the organization and an enthusiastic party worker, should have the nomination, increased tenfold. The news had also the effect of rendering his self-appointed task of spreading his friend's cause much easier, and he found less difficulty in winning men over to his way of thinking with every twenty-four hours that passed after it had come out in the papers.

About the middle of August, however, the "Autocrat of Oyster Bay," as the President had been termed at that time by one of his critics, put a heavy spoke in Ellis's wheel by sending forth the dictum after consultation with Republican party leaders at Sagamore Hill, that Downes must be the party's nominee for Governor. No matter how much the organization men might resent this arbitrary interference on the part of the President, they could not help realizing that it would have its influence on the voters of the State at large, who, they said, believed blindly in the theory that the King could do no wrong, and blew hot or cold as the case might be, at the mere lifting of the royal eyebrow.

“Here We Are, Cora!”

These were busy times for them, the organization leaders; for while they had only to unite their forces behind one man in order to defeat Mr. Downes, the character of that man was of the utmost importance if they were to satisfy not only their own ideas of the requirements of a candidate for such high office, but to placate as well public opinion and the President's. They were as sincere in their wish to secure a man of principle and ability — insisting upon only one stipulation in their choice, that he should not be prejudiced against the organization — as they were in their wish not to antagonize the voters at large, which the nomination of an incompetent or unknown man must surely do. In this dilemma not a few of them caught gladly at Ellis's suggestion that Speaker Ordway should be the candidate for the nomination decided upon to oppose Downes, since his integrity and ability was a matter of general knowledge, while he was at the same time a loyal organization man; but the majority were still in doubt.

“And yet,” as Verney told the young Speaker confidently toward the end of the month, “I think we'll convince them all by the time the convention is actually on.”

Ordway smiled a little at his friend's positive tone.

“You're an optimist, Verney,” he said, “but I'm sure I hope you're right. I think New York's had a little too much of Mr. Downes, and if the State needs me, if our friends think I'm the right man to meet the needs of the situation, I shall be proud to make the best fight I can against him to get the nomination. But

The Politician

I don't believe, I can't think it's going that way. I've a kind of notion the Egotist [he meant the Governor] will get it again." He turned his dark intellectual face and his dreamer's eyes toward his friend. "It's not probable, at least it does n't sound likely to me that a man as young as I am, only thirty-four years old, should be Governor." He made the statement seriously, for in the eyes of as staunch a Republican as he was, receiving the nomination was synonymous with being elected. But you could n't discourage Verney that way.

"Why not?" he said hotly. "Age has n't anything to do with it. Why, Patrick Henry was a senator at twenty-nine,—a few months younger than the age required by the Constitution. William Pitt was only twenty-five when he was prime minister of England; and think of Alexander Hamilton and LaFayette! They were statesmen and young men too! There's no reason why you should n't be anything you like, as far as age goes!"

And he was right in a way; there was no real reason why Oliver Ordway should not have made an excellent governor. He was young, of course, but in every other way eminently qualified. He had force of character, brains, and intellect, or he would not have risen to be what he was, Speaker of the House at Albany. He had graduated with high honors at one of the leading universities of the country, and had been admitted to the bar a few years afterwards. He was also a young man of large private fortune, doubled by his marriage to one of the rich Misses Brock of his own city, whose

“Here We Are, Cora!”

inheritance was almost equal to his own. Thus endowed, he had been able to give up his law practice and devote himself exclusively to a political career, which was one reason perhaps why he held office so much above his friend Ellis.

In other respects the two young men were much alike; typical New Yorkers, both of them, about the same age, well-born, fine-looking, and ambitious. The chief point of dissimilarity lay in their circumstances; for while one was rich, the other only belonged to a family which had once been rich. In character, too, the young men differed a little; for while both were actuated by the same lofty ideals and principles in going into politics, the older of the two was perhaps more idealistic and less practical than the younger. Ordway was nevertheless fully qualified to maintain an important administrative position; for if he was not always practical himself, he possessed the faculty of choosing competent subordinates who were, and to a great degree the rare power of making them work in harmony.

With this light on his character and ability, it is not difficult to believe with Verney in Ordway's fitness to be Governor of New York State, and to understand the earnestness and complete absorption with which Ellis threw himself into the business of getting him the Republican nomination for that office. Obviously Verney was a very busy young man; and it was unfortunate, perhaps, that Harriet Rand, accompanied by her aunt, should choose to arrive in New York just at this time, because he would really have liked to see more of

The Politician

her. Harriet, however, was quite unaware of this state of affairs, and she and Mrs. Cumloch had hardly been in the Holland House long enough for their trunks to be unpacked, before she sent the young man a note telling him of her arrival, as he had asked her to do whenever she came to New York, in supreme confidence that immediate sight of him would follow. But sad, very sad to relate, nothing at all came of it. Verney Ellis, working almost continually night and day, could not find time even to telephone, and the result was that the impossible happened and three whole days passed without sight or sound of him. This was a contretemps most inexplicable to Miss Rand, who had been used to having men fly at the beckon of her hand; and she could not in the least understand an absorption in other affairs that would not permit of a ten-minute call.

Then at last she saw him, but saw him merely, with no opportunity to speak. In despair of his coming, and to show herself that she was not disappointed, she arranged a theatre party for the fourth evening of her stay in New York, composed of herself and her aunt, a Mr. and Mrs. Chittenden, friends of Mrs. Cumloch, and a young man who had been Francis Morton's room-mate at college and who lived in New York. His name was Gerald Merrick, and needless to say, he was a great admirer of the Chicago heiress, whom he had met while visiting Francis several years before.

The play was very good, and Mr. Merrick as entertaining as he knew how to be, and Harriet had almost

“Here We Are, Cora!”

forgotten the extraordinary behavior of Mr. Ellis, when something occurred which brought back to her mind most keenly her sense of his delinquency. She and the other two women in the party were standing on the steps of the theatre after the play, waiting for the men to find their carriage, when Harriet observed not far away from her an extremely handsome and beautifully dressed woman, evidently waiting as they were for a carriage. Doubtless her escort, whoever he was, had gone down into the crowd in front of the Bijou to hasten the arrival of the equipage in question, even as Mr. Chitenden and young Gerald Merrick had done. There was nothing at all remarkable about this circumstance, and Harriet was just wondering why she speculated on the matter at all, when a good-looking young man with an eagerness of manner that was familiar to her, detached himself from the crowd on the sidewalk below and, running up to the girl on the steps, said gayly and so distinctly that Harriet could not help hearing, “Here we are, Cora!”

It was Verney.

CHAPTER VI

THE EPISODE OF THE BRACELET

IT was this incident that made it difficult for Harriet to execute a commission with which Mrs. Presbey had charged her; namely, to call at Cornelia's mother's and leave there a certain diamond bracelet belonging to Mrs. Ellis. Mrs. Presbey had borrowed it on a recent visit to New York and had not yet sent it back. It was a family heirloom, and Mrs. Ellis had requisitioned it from her elder daughter in favor of her youngest, Carol, who was to be "introduced" that winter. Carol had more right to it, she had decided, than Cornelia, who, as she justly said, had managed to lose almost every other heirloom of the kind the family had ever possessed. Mrs. Presbey, after borrowing the piece of jewelry, was characteristically negligent about returning it; and now that her attention had been called to the fact that her mother really wished it returned, she hastened to send it back by the first means which presented itself, which happened to be by making use of her friend Harriet Rand's trip to New York at that time. This was, furthermore, in her opinion, the safest method that she could use, for like

The Episode of the Bracelet

most women she was unwilling to trust the mails with anything of value.

Miss Rand accepted the responsibility without any demur, since it was Cornelia who asked the favor of her, and promised to give the bracelet into no hands but Mrs. Ellis's own. She in fact rather enjoyed the idea of going to the house where the Politician lived, until the incident of the evening before gave her such signal proof of the lightness with which her friend regarded their friendship. With hot cheeks she remembered the curious glance with which Verney's handsome companion favored her when he caught sight of Harriet and raised his hat; nor could the information revealed later by Gerald Merrick, that she was Mrs. Willie Gibbs, a certain very fashionable and well-known young married woman, at all lessen her sense that her friend had failed her.

She felt now that the commission she had accepted so light-heartedly was one of great difficulty; for in her disappointment that the young man should choose so to ignore her presence in New York in the face of the fact that he had time to go to the theatre with someone else, she had resolved that nothing should induce her to make any further effort to see him, though the shopping and visiting among their friends which her aunt had planned should keep them never so long in the city. And now, here was Cornelia's old bracelet to interfere, necessitating a journey into the very camp of the enemy and compelling her to run the chance of meeting Verney face to face in his own home! Never-

The Politician

theless and in spite of this feeling of reluctance, before very long she did manage to carry out the mission with which she had been entrusted, though she took care to go early in the afternoon, so that she might not encounter Verney, and she told herself as she went up the steps of that one of the row of brown stone fronts on West Twelfth Street which was Mrs. Ellis's, that she was very glad there was no possible chance of such a contingency. The maid at the door did not know whether Mrs. Ellis was at home or not. She would go upstairs and see, if Miss Rand — Harriet had given her her card — would come in and be seated. Harriet came in and was shown through a large front drawing-room with cheese-cloth draped chandeliers, closed blinds, and furniture still in its summer garb of brown holland, into a smaller one similarly conditioned.

“Mrs. Ellis has only just returned from Tuxedo,” explained the maid, “to open the house,” and after raising one of the shades, she departed to find out if her mistress were in.

Harriet seated herself in one of the big shapeless chairs in the middle of the room where a shaft of the August sunlight streamed through the uncurtained window, and looked about her. Here, then, was where her friend, the Politician lived,—or was he so much her friend? The question in her mind showed how far the apparition of Mrs. Gibbs and Verney on the steps of the theatre the other evening had gone toward shaking her faith in that regard. It was not a particularly

The Episode of the Bracelet

handsome or elegant house, to judge by what she had seen so far. Certainly it would not bear comparison with the fresh magnificence of her aunt's home on the Drive in Chicago. It was high-ceilinged and gloomy, like most of the houses she had seen in New York, with the dark tapestry-hung walls, velvet hangings that were too well worn to trouble about putting them away, and heavy furniture belonging to a family mansion that had been furnished two or three decades ago. Like the reproductions of oil paintings on the walls, Aurora over the marble mantelpiece and the Sistine Madonna across the way, its worth was unquestioned though its style was not at all in accord with modern tastes and fashions. Yet here and there a little carved stand or gilt table or lamp of hammered brass gave evidence that later additions had been made to the furniture. Probably by the fastidious and extravagant Mrs. Presbey, whose ambition in life was to be up-to-date, Harriet thought; or maybe by Miss Ellis, who was coming out that winter, whom she did not know, and in whose behalf she was acting the part of special messenger in returning the diamond bracelet.

"Hello," said a voice unexpectedly; and Harriet, her thoughts thus surprisingly interrupted, looked up and beheld Verney regarding her in pleased surprise from the doorway.

"How do you do, Mr. Ellis?" she said as composedly as she could and as coldly, rising to her feet.

But Mr. Ellis apparently did not notice the coldness.

The Politician

"How awfully good of you to come and see me," he said, coming smilingly toward her, "when you knew I was too busy to come and see you!"

"I did n't!" said Harriet indignantly, and doing her best to withdraw the hand she had foolishly and quite mechanically offered him. "I came only to leave a bracelet for Cornelia — I mean for your mother" — she stammered rather confusedly; she was so afraid he would n't understand that her coming had been obligatory. "She wanted me to leave it with Mrs. Ellis!"

"Oh, yes, I know," said Verney; "I've heard nothing but that bracelet from mother and Carol ever since the Baby [that was his sister's nickname] thought of coming out. It was most awfully kind of you to bring it!"

But Harriet was not to be conciliated by fair words. "I would n't have thought of coming now, though," she said gravely, "if I had had any idea that I should meet you!"

The young man looked shocked. "Don't," he said, "don't say such things! It's cruel, when I'm so glad to see you — and when I am so ill, too," he added.

"Ill?" said Harriet, her resentment against him arrested by this idea.

"Yes," he said, "that's why you find me here instead of at my office, and it's all because I have n't had any sleep to speak of for the last six weeks or so."

"Really?" said Harriet, unable to keep the sympathy out of her voice. "That's bad, is n't it?"

"As bad as bad can be!" replied Ellis, encouraged,

The Episode of the Bracelet

“and you never knew such a clock as there is in this house! Why, if you’ll believe me — last night it struck every hour!”

Harriet could n’t help laughing, and after that, of course, it was useless to keep up the pretence that she was displeased with him; moreover, as he stepped into the sunlight and took a chair near her, she saw with concern that he did look ill, or exceedingly tired, at least, and remembered compassionately his healthy, animated look when she saw him last June, with his out-of-doors tan and his alert, vigorous air.

“I’m sorry you’re not well,” she began sympathetically — but “Never mind me,” he cut in; “tell me about yourself. Tell me, in the first place, why you were so cross with me just now?”

Harriet hesitated. Should she tell him or would he be unduly flattered? However, she was a truthful, candid soul; so she took that risk and confessed bravely.

“Because I think it was so unkind of you not to come and see me when I sent you a note. You know you asked me to let you know when I came to New York. I thought we were friends, but —” She stopped and cast a very reproachful and attractive look at him from her Madonna eyes.

It was Verney’s turn to be sorry; in spite of appearances, he did have a conscience. “I know,” he said. “And you can’t think how badly I felt not to be able to go right off. I intended to — of course — before you left, but I’ve been too busy to manage it these last few days.”

The Politician

Harriet's eyes sparkled warmly. All her indignation returned in a flood. "Not too busy to go to the theatre," she couldn't help saying, though it was the last thing she had meant to say.

Verney flushed unhappily. He had been guilty he knew of discourtesy if not of unfriendliness in disregarding that note, and her knowledge of how he had spent one of the evenings in question, made it impossible to continue to plead lack of time as an excuse. That he had asked her to let him know when she came to New York, in a moment of enthusiasm and without any idea that she would ever act upon the suggestion, he was also aware did not make him any less guilty, since it appeared she had chosen to do so. He was thoroughly ashamed, for he never intentionally hurt people's feelings; and although he rarely reaped the consequences of his habit of saying pleasant things that he meant only while he said them, he was always repentant when he did. In this case he was more than usually repentant, for he found that he cared more for Miss Rand's opinion of him than he had supposed, and he even discovered an unsuspected stir at his heart when he met her reproachful brown eyes.

"I am more sorry than I can say," he said humbly, and without attempting to explain the circumstance Harriet had mentioned, knowing, as he did, that it was without explanation. "I have behaved very badly, I know, and I don't suppose you will ever forgive me?"

Harriet's anger could hardly withstand such abject humility. Still it did not vanish immediately.

The Episode of the Bracelet

"You don't deserve forgiveness," she said slowly; "I hate people who say what they don't mean!"

This charge surprised Verney, for while he acknowledged that he often forgot things after saying them, he did think he meant them at the time they were said.

"But you're mistaken," he said eagerly, "I did mean it, when I said it, I swear to the Lord I did!"

The *naïveté* of the speech saved the day for him by again amusing Harriet.

"You're quite hopeless," she said laughing. "I can't seem to make you understand the enormity of your offence at all. But I'll forgive you just the same, because you're so delightfully dense!"

Verney, who did not care why he was forgiven, as long as that beatific state was an actual fact, smiled delightedly. "That is most kind," he said; "and I wish you would go on calling me names, it makes me feel better somehow!"

"Then I shan't do it," she said. "I don't want you to feel better; you have not felt worse long enough." But her expression was by no means severe, and she added kindly, "And now tell me what it is you've been so busy about; I want to know how the Cause is progressing." The spoiled child that is in almost every heiress, that cannot help being a part of the nature of every young girl who has had all the money she wants to spend all her life and been surfeited with attention, and that had prompted her feeling that she had been slighted, was now quite appeased.

Verney beamed. "I hoped you would," he said, and

The Politician

felt suddenly that this very good-looking girl with her frank, straightforward ways was the one person he knew to whom he could talk openly about the things that lay nearest his heart.

"I've been working like a nailer," he said, "since I saw you out in Chicago. I took only a week off in July, when I went up to the woods with my Uncle Richmond — you must meet him, by the way, he is the best there is, and — as I told you at first — I've hardly as much as slept since I returned."

Harriet looked her concern. "But you must," she said, "you must sleep. If you lose your health, what will become of your career?"

Verney had never particularly, or in so many words, thought of himself as having a "career." The word had been so much used in connection with fictitious heroes in novels and on the stage that it had only a hackneyed significance to him; but he understood that Harriet used it because she really believed he had a career and that in the fullest sense of the word, and he felt grateful to her for the belief. More than anything was he grateful for the anxiety that her eyes showed so plainly as she made her plea. How very sweet it was of her to be so interested as that in what he did!

"Thanks," he said; "it's good of you to worry about it, although I would not have distressed you for anything. And I would n't tell you all this about myself, only I am awfully blue to-day, and there are n't a whole lot of people that I feel are interested in hearing, and I feel somehow, you are?"

The Episode of the Bracelet

“I am,” said Harriet quietly, “and I want to be your friend, to have you tell me things if it helps. I should be proud to be the confidante of —” she paused and smiled brightly at him — “of a politician!” she finished.

Verney had never before in his experience encountered anything like the utter charm of this candid hero-worship of which he was made the object, and although he recognized that her words were half playful, a thrill of pleasure went through him. The admiration of a young and ingenuous member of the other sex will often succeed in flattering a man not usually susceptible to flattery. He did care about his work more than anything else in life, and it was pleasant to have this very attractive girl care too; and Harriet in her supreme confidence that she was interested in the man on account of the career and not in the career on account of the man, showed more plainly than her natural reserve would have permitted if the reverse had been true, that she did care. No wonder that Verney’s pulses quickened a little.

“Friendship is the finest thing in the world,” he said, with the earnestness and enthusiasm of the man who knows nothing at all about that sentiment where women are concerned.

And “Yes,” she agreed, with the conviction and finality of the girl who has had no experience as yet of any other sentiment.

“I have something rather interesting to tell you,” he said next. “It’s only in the air at present, nothing to count on at all — but they’re talking about nominating

The Politician

me for Attorney-general if my friend Ordway gets the nomination for Governor." He flushed at Harriet's expression of pleased surprise.

"Oh," she said, "why did n't you tell me before? Do you think there's any chance he will get it?"

"It looks as though he might; we've got things started now in nice shape, and I should n't wonder at all if he carried the convention. We've had a test vote applied in thirteen of the Assembly Districts of New York and Kings Counties, and six of the New York Districts cast majorities against the renomination of the Governor, and the Kings County totals showed a net vote of more than two to one against him. Of course it's only a test, but does n't it look as if we had a good show to win?"

Harriet thought it did, but all unconsciously showed that her interest in that fact was on account of Ellis's prospects, not Ordway's.

"Then I should think you'd be almost sure of the Attorney-generalship!" she said.

But Verney laughed. "Not in the least," he said; "nothing's sure in this life, and in political life that's more than ever true."

"But you said you'd be offered it if Ordway were nominated?"

"No, I only said they were talking about offering it to me. What is more likely to happen is that they will change their minds and offer it to some one else."

"Oh, why?" she asked, disappointed.

He laughed. "No reason, except that it seems to be

The Episode of the Bracelet

an established fact that the men who do the hard practical work of politics, are n't the ones to draw prizes."

"Must they work 'all for love and nothing for reward,' as the 'Faery Queen' has it?"

"Apparently, unless of course they're out for graft."

She shook her head. "I don't grasp the psychology of that."

He looked very thoughtful. "It's their own fault," he said seriously, "the politicians' own fault. Because many of them are n't honest and disinterested, because many of them work for their party for what there is in it, for what money they can make, because most of them are selfish. And that discredits them with the public. The people know, or most of them do, that to get anywhere or do anything there must be men in control who will point out the way to them, help them to form their opinions, get the average good but lazy citizen to vote; but they resent — and quite properly — the abuse of this service, and decline to consider for high office the men who take advantage of the power vested in them and make of it an article of commerce, to be bought and sold."

"What a pity!" said Harriet. "And so the poor things who work just as hard as the others and harder, but are not corrupt, have to suffer for the wrong-doing of the others!"

"Exactly. The innocent as usual suffer with the guilty. And that is why I am so pleased that they spoke of offering me the nomination for Attorney-gen-

The Politician

eral. Precedent to the contrary notwithstanding, you know, it would seem to indicate that honesty as an asset in the election to office is coming up in the world. And that's why I so much want Ordway, who is himself a hard-working, practical politician of principle, to win. It's my ambition, as I think I've told you, to remove the odium from the reputation of politicians, to make the title no longer a term of reproach; and with every appointment of the right kind of politician to office, it comes nearer gratification."

"I hope you will succeed," said Harriet. So absorbed were they in the conversation that neither of them saw the maid, who had returned from her trip upstairs to tell Miss Rand that Mrs. Ellis was not at home, come to the door that opened into the hall and after a moment of hesitation, retreat. Convinced that it was all right and that they did not need to hear from her, by the fact that "Mr. Verney" was talking to the young lady, she had tactfully withdrawn to another part of the house without interrupting them.

"I wish I could help you in some way, but I'm afraid there's nothing much a girl can do," added Miss Rand.

"Yes, there is," Verney assured her earnestly. "A girl can do a great deal. Just to know someone who has confidence in you, to have a friend who believes in you, is the greatest help in the world toward giving a man confidence in himself. And you can't do anything without confidence."

"And opportunity?" said Harriet.

"Yes, opportunity, of course. There are all sorts

The Episode of the Bracelet

of those in politics, wrong opportunities to rise that mean the abandonment of your principles, and right ones. But it's only the right ones, of course, that a man regrets, the chances you lose through your own negligence. That's a hard thought, you know, to think you might have done something if only you had n't been asleep at the switch when Opportunity came along. A favorite poem of mine is on the subject. Would you like to see it? I think I have it with me?"

Harriet said she would very much indeed, and he opened his pocketbook and took out a newspaper clipping.

"It's by a man named Ingalls, and it's one of the best poems I know, classics not excepted," he said, handing it to her.

"You read it aloud," she suggested.

"If you wish," he said, and read these verses on "Opportunity":

"Master of human destinies am I;
Fame, Love, and Fortune on my footsteps wait;
Cities and fields I walk; I penetrate
Deserts and seas remote; and passing by
Hovel and mart and palace, soon or late
I knock unbidden once at every gate.
If sleeping, wake; if feasting, rise, before
I turn away. It is the hour of fate;
And they who follow me reach every state
Mortals desire, and conquer every foe
Save death; but those who doubt or hesitate,
Condemned to failure, penury, and woe,
Seek me in vain and uselessly implore;
I answer not, and I return no more."

The Politician

The voice of the reader shook into silence as the last sounding phrase rolled from his lips, momentous with warning, and sank into his heart and that of his listener.

"Fame, Love, and Fortune on my footsteps wait!" breathed Harriet, thrilling at the impressive words.

"I answer not, and I return no more!" repeated Ellis; "tremendous, is n't it?"

"Yes, but it's wrong. Because it does return, opportunity! I know a better philosophy than that, one of hope — and I have its teachings embodied here in another set of verses! See! Look!" And she rose in her eagerness and drew from her purse another clipping and thrust it into Verney's hand as he also rose.

"It's an answer to your poem, called by the same name, 'Opportunity.' It was written by Judge Walter Malone, and came out in the papers just after yours was published."

"I never saw it," said Verney. "Then you had read mine before?"

"No, I missed it when it came out, but I've always heard of it and wanted to read it."

Ellis drew a long breath. "It's rather an odd thing, quite an interesting coincidence," he said, "is n't it, that we should each unknown to the other have cut out and cherished question and answer like that?"

"Very interesting, very strange." Brown eye looked into blue eye in mutual wonder, and upon discovering the joy of the thing continued to gaze long after the wonder had left them — flushing cheek for the girl and

The Episode of the Bracelet

accelerated breathing for the man testifying to the existence of a dangerous side to that fascinating employment.

"Read it," said Harriet presently — she was the first to drop her eyes — and held out the poem again.

"No," he said, "we'll read it together." And side by side, shoulder touching shoulder, they stood by the uncurtained window with the late afternoon sunshine falling over the brown roses in her hat and his smooth dark head, while their eyes travelled over the following lines to "Opportunity":

"They do me wrong who say I come no more,
When once I've knocked and failed to find you in;
For every day I stand outside your door
And bid you wake and rise, to fight and win.
Wail not for precious chances passed away,
Weep not for golden ages on the wane;
Each night I burn the records of the day;
At sunrise every soul is born again.
Laugh like a boy at splendors that have sped;
To vanished joys be blind and deaf and dumb;
My judgments seal the dead past with its dead,
But never bind a moment yet to come.
Though deep in mire, wring not your hands and weep;
I lend my arm to all who say 'I can.'
No shamefaced outcast ever sank so deep
But yet may rise and be again a man.
Dost thou behold thy lost youth all aghast?
Dost reel from righteous retribution's blow?
Then turn from blotted archives of the past,
And find the future's pages white as snow.
Art thou a mourner? Rouse thee from thy spell.
Art thou a sinner? Sins may be forgiven.
Each morning gives thee wings to flee from Hell,
Each night a star to guide thy feet to Heaven!"

The Politician

“Is n’t that wonderful?” cried Ellis as they finished. “Why, a man could conquer the world after reading that! I swear to the Lord he could! ‘Each night I burn the records of the day; at sunrise every soul is born again!’ Could anything be finer?”

“And, ‘laugh like a boy at splendors that have sped; to vanished joys be blind and deaf and dumb!’ Oh, Verney,” rejoined Harriet, scarcely conscious that she had said his name, she had called him so in her heart so long, “is n’t that fine?”

“Great!” agreed the young man enthusiastically.

“And don’t you believe it? Is n’t it all truer than the other?”

“I’m sure of it! Yours teaches courage and hope — mine, despair. Can you let me have this copy? I know a number of other men who will be the better for reading it.”

“Of course; I have another. Besides, I know them by heart.”

“Thanks,” he said; “you don’t know how much good you’ve done me. I was feeling awfully blue and down on my luck this afternoon, and you and your poem have inspired me all over again — set me on my feet.”

He seized her hands impulsively as he spoke.

At this moment his mother appeared in the doorway.

CHAPTER VII

FAME, LOVE, AND FORTUNE

MRS. ELLIS had just returned from a shopping trip down town, and having let herself in with a latch-key, had not been warned by the maid that she had a visitor. Voices from the sitting-room first intimated that some one was there, and as she expected her youngest daughter Carol down from Tuxedo that afternoon, she was not at all surprised. That young woman had put off leaving that delightful place until the last possible moment and was to take a later train to the city than her mother's. Mrs. Ellis therefore entered the room on the supposition that her daughter had arrived and that one of the voices was hers and the other that of her son Vernor, whom she had left in the house feeling rather indisposed, when she went down town that morning.

She was a tall, heavily built woman with a plain fashion of dress, gorgeous rings on the small, well-formed hands, from which she had just stripped the gloves, and a regularity of profile which a rapidly developing double chin had not yet destroyed. A pair of piercing blue eyes behind her glasses united with severely dressed gray hair to give her an expression of severity; and Harriet, as she saw her standing in the

The Politician

doorway and realized whom she must be, made up her mind at once that explanations to this uncompromising and aristocratic old lady would be difficult to make. For her part, Mrs. Ellis peering near-sightedly at them through her glasses down the long stretch of dim-lit drawing-room, where they stood now in the shadow, came to the conclusion as she took in the fact that the man and the girl had been standing with clasped hands, that Carol had only just arrived, and that brother and sister were greeting each other; though even as she came to this conclusion, a vague surprise at the tenderness of that greeting crossed her mind. Carol and Vernor were seldom demonstrative toward each other, and their relations had been noted in the family for being of the cat-and-dog variety which usually obtains between big brothers and little sisters. However, it was on this supposition that she addressed the two ill-defined figures standing in mute self-consciousness at the other end of the room.

“Is that you, Carol?” she asked. “I did n’t know you were here. I’ve only just returned from down town myself.”

Harriet started. It was worse than she had thought. Mrs. Ellis had not seen the maid, then, and did not know who she was. If she had been troubled at the thought of explaining how she came to know Verney so well, how much more apprehensive did she become when it dawned upon her that Mrs. Ellis had just come in from the street and that she had not been in the house during the entire conversation with Verney. What had hap-

Fame, Love, and Fortune

pened to the maid, then, until whose return only she had allowed the young man to beguile the moments? And how mean of Verney not to have told her at once that his mother was out! But then she should have asked him, perhaps, and perhaps he did n't really know! It was more Cornelia's fault, after all, that she found herself in such a position, for asking her to undertake the commission of the bracelet.

While these thoughts passed swiftly through Harriet's mind, Mrs. Ellis had turned and was going toward the hall, evidently taking silence for consent in the matter of having her question answered, and then it was the kind of question that does n't require an answer.

"I'm going up to rest before dinner," she said; "you children be ready on time, won't you? I've brought only Wilson and Katy down with me to-day, so we'll have it early."

She would have gone without realizing that she was not speaking to her daughter, and Harriet would have been spared the unpleasant task of enlightening her; but Harriet was not that kind of girl. She had no intention of sparing herself at the cost of deceiving Mrs. Ellis and setting a clandestine seal upon her meeting with Verney; so in spite of the young man's protest — for he knew his mother's deep-dyed veneration for the conventions and had whispered that she had "better let it go at that, and bring the bracelet another day," — she ran after Mrs. Ellis and caught up with her at the foot of the stairs."

"Oh, Mrs. Ellis!" she cried, rather breathlessly,

The Politician

“you’ve made a mistake! I’m not your daughter at all. I’m Harriet Rand, and I came to return Cornelia’s bracelet.”

Mrs. Ellis, who had just gathered her skirt for the ascent of the stairs, relinquished it at this surprising address, in favor of adjusting her glasses.

“What, what?” she said, “I don’t understand. Who did you say you were?” Then upon perceiving that the person she was speaking to was a young and attractive girl of about Carol’s age, she spoke more kindly. “What is it, my dear? And what is your name? I should know it, I know, but Carol has so many friends it’s hard to remember them all.”

Harriet saw that the older woman did not connect her with the girl she had seen with Verney the moment before, and that she had more probably jumped to the conclusion that this young girl was a friend whom Carol had brought with her. This made her task more difficult and embarrassed her still more, though at the same time it only made her all the more determined to make it clear to Mrs. Ellis who she really was.

“I’m Harriet Rand of Chicago,” she repeated desperately; “I know your daughter, Mrs. Presbey, and she asked me to give you this bracelet.” Harriet held it out to her. “I called this afternoon for that purpose, hoping to see you; and while the maid was gone to find out if you were at home your son came in and entertained me.”

If Cornelia Presbey had done as she had told Harriet she would do, and had written her mother that Harriet

Fame, Love, and Fortune

was coming, and on what errand, the mere mention of the word "bracelet" would have revealed the situation to Mrs. Ellis at once, and all would have been plain sailing. But Cornelia the dilatory, Cornelia the forgetful, who was always going to do and never did, had forgotten again. And the consequence was that the only part of Harriet's speech that the older lady noticed was the part that seemed to have reference to the confidential and intimate attitude in which she had discovered this stranger and her son, upon first entering the room, and which now seemed to her to require explanation.

"So you know my son, do you," she asked coldly, and stopped as if for further enlightenment as to the exact degree of Harriet's knowledge. Verney from the doorway where he had been anxiously observing his mother unobserved by her, now stepped forward to take his part in the explanations; but Harriet, whose blood was up by this time and who suddenly felt not at all afraid of the rather formidable old lady she had been talking to, waved him back.

"Yes," she said, in leisurely accents; "I know your son. I met him out in Chicago some time ago." She looked Mrs. Ellis squarely and calmly in the eye. "Here's your bracelet," she added, "that Cornelia asked me to bring"; and putting the little package into Mrs. Ellis's unheeding hand, she turned to Verney.

"I'm ready to go home, now," she said, "if you'll take me."

Either the look or the bracelet or the sound of her

The Politician

daughter's name must have enlightened Mrs. Ellis at last, or perhaps it was the noble air of the girl and her spirit that proved sufficient guarantee of her utter lack of a guilty conscience; for all in a moment the older woman recognized that she had made a mistake in questioning her conduct in any way, and coming swiftly forward took Harriet's hand with all graciousness.

"I see!" she said, "you've brought me back my bracelet. How very good of you, and how very stupid of Cornelia not to let me know you were coming!—it has made me so slow about realizing who you were."

"It does n't matter at all, Mrs. Ellis," replied Harriet, relieved to find that it was only Cornelia's carelessness and not the unfortunate attitude in which she and Verney had been caught that had caused Mrs. Ellis's doubt of her. "And I'm very glad to have been of any service."

"It was nice of you to bring it," reiterated Mrs. Ellis, "and I'm very grateful to Cornelia for sending such a delightful emissary with this troublesome piece of jewelry. She knew I would like to meet you."

"Of course she did!" corroborated Verney, asserting himself now, his eyes kindling with admiration for the character Harriet had shown in handling a rather difficult situation. "And look here, mother, I want Miss Rand to stay to dinner!"

"So do I, if she can stay," returned his mother instantly, smiling at Harriet.

"That's settled then. Here, let's have your coat!" he said, before Harriet had time to speak.

Fame, Love, and Fortune

"But I must n't!" she expostulated. "I have to get home!"

"No, you don't; you told me you did n't have anything else to do and you'd stay if you were asked!" fabricated Verney, deftly removing the coat which Harriet had not intended to yield.

"I did n't say any such thing," she said, half laughing, half indignant. "Don't believe him, Mrs. Ellis, will you?" And she threw that lady a beseeching glance.

"As if I would!" replied the Politician's mother, with a look of pretended scorn at her son. "Don't you suppose I know Verney! But that need n't bother us at all. Independent of his wishes in the matter it would make me very happy to have you stay. I expect my daughter down from Tuxedo every minute, and I should like to have her meet you."

Harriet hesitated and demurred again, but Mrs. Ellis was so sincere and so urgent, and the look in Verney's eye so threatening, that she at last allowed herself to be persuaded.

"That's nice," said Mrs. Ellis; "it's a very informal way to ask you, I know, but then it's the informal season now, before everybody gets back to town. I've only just arrived myself!"

"That's so," said Verney, anxiously. "I forgot that. There'll be something to eat for dinner, mother?"

"Those ducks your Uncle Richmond shot. Wilson brought them down with him to-day; and maybe, bread

The Politician

and butter!" replied his mother, smiling. "Will that do?"

"Oh, you know very well that's not all!" said Ellis, laughing. His mother showed a certain relish for teasing him at times that often caught him unawares.

"And that reminds me," remarked Mrs. Ellis from the stairs, "your uncle is coming to dinner, too; he may come with Carol."

"Fine business!" commented Verney to Harriet. "You'll like my Uncle Richmond; he's a wonder!"

And Harriet agreed with him when a little later, after she had telephoned her aunt about her plan to stay to dinner at Mrs. Ellis's, Mr. Vernor arrived in company with Carol Ellis.

Richmond Vernor was a tall, finely-built man with the clean-shaven face of youth and the gray hair of middle age. He didn't look in the least like Verney; but Harriet, as she shook hands with him noticed several points of resemblance between him and his sister, Mrs. Ellis. She was impressed, however, with his cordial, courteous manner and the humorous kindliness of his brown eyes. Verney's sister Carol resembled him slightly, but looked more like Cornelia Presbey. She had the same very fair hair and irregularly attractive features.

"I've heard Cornelia talk about you ever so often," said Miss Ellis, very small, very slight, and rather pretty, clasping Harriet's hand warmly as Verney made the necessary introductions and explanations. "And

Fame, Love, and Fortune

"I do think," as her brother finished telling the history of the bracelet and its restoration to its rightful owners, "it was nice of you to bring me back the bracelet. Cornelia's such an old slowcoach I thought I'd never see it again!"

Harriet thoroughly enjoyed the dinner, served in the large, dark, high-ceilinged dining-room panelled in black walnut, with the ubiquitous brown holland covers on the seats of the black walnut chairs.

"Why didn't Wilson take off those old covers, mamma?" said Carol, looking about with discontent at the brown holland aspect of the room.

"My dear," replied her mother indulgently, "give the poor man a minute! We've only come to town today, and you know we're back a whole month earlier than usual this year."

"On father's account?" asked Verney.

A shadow crossed Mrs. Ellis's face.

"Yes," she said; "although Delia" — Delia was the cook, who had been in charge of the house all summer while her mistress was in Tuxedo — "looks after him pretty well, I don't like to leave him alone any longer than I can help."

The Politician was silent. He knew his mother's reason for not wishing to leave his father alone was the nervous condition of Mr. Ellis's health, which was supposed to have been the immediate result of a long succession of business reverses. A feeling of remorse came over Verney that he had not himself been with him more. There was no excuse for it, living as he

The Politician

had been in the same house with his father more or less all summer; and he went on eating without saying anything.

"Carol has already begun to worry about her *début*, I see," remarked Mr. Vernor, glancing mischievously at his niece. "She's afraid you'll leave the brown hollands on then, Helen!" And he smiled at his sister.

"I'm not at all! I was n't thinking of it!" denied Carol, blushing furiously to prove she had been. "You think you know everything, Uncle Ritchie!"

"I should think he did too," observed Verney, waking up, "to judge by your blushes."

"Quite a sunset!" chimed in young Miss Ellis's other tormentor. "You must get over that habit, Baby, or people will never believe you're really out! Ask Miss Rand if that is n't so. I'm sure she was n't half so nervous about it all as you are."

"On the contrary," protested Harriet, coming to the rescue of the tormented one, though she smiled reassuringly at the older man for whom she had conceived a sudden liking, "I was so nervous and excited about my coming-out reception that when the great day came I did n't want to go down at all, and begged my aunt to let me stay in my room."

"But she did n't let you?" queried Miss Ellis, horrified expostulation in every tone.

"Yes," said Verney solemnly, "they let her; and all the people who came to meet the beautiful Miss Rand went away in tears, they were so disappointed."

"How can you be so ridiculous?" laughed Harriet.

Fame, Love, and Fortune

She didn't stay very long after dinner, for Mrs. Cumloch had promised to send her maid in a cab at nine o'clock. And as Harriet and the two men stood in the hall waiting for the cab to arrive, Mrs. Ellis and Carol having lingered in the dining-room to give some instructions to Wilson, Mr. Vernor said, putting his arm about Verney's shoulders as he spoke,

"This is a great fellow, Miss Rand, if you didn't know it before. We call him 'The Politician' in the family just by way of a joke, but no one takes him and his career seriously except me, and I'm betting on him!" he added playfully, slapping his nephew affectionately on the back as he spoke.

The Politician turned a sparkling eye on his uncle and smiled gratefully. "I couldn't do anything if you were n't," said he.

"I'm betting on him too," asserted Harriet, with the nicest kind of a glance at the young man.

"Then he can't help winning," Mr. Vernor replied quickly.

"With two such friends to believe in me," said Ellis lightly, "it would be a pity if I didn't! I'll probably wake some morning before long and find myself famous."

"Yes, with your qualifications all you have to do is to take advantage of your opportunities, and Fame, Love and Fortune, as it said in the poem, are yours!" Harriet said.

"Fame and Fortune, perhaps, if I'm lucky," said Ellis soberly.

The Politician

"And why not Love?" asked the girl, too sure of herself to consider the question personal at all.

"A man can't expect everything," replied Ellis, knowing that in so replying he was avoiding the issue. The arrival of Mrs. Cumloch's maid was announced, and Harriet made her graceful acknowledgments and departed. When Verney had returned from putting Miss Rand into the cab he found his uncle, who had been too tactful to go too, still standing in the hall where he had left him.

"It's a great thing to have a career, Uncle Ritch," he said, "is n't it?" — yawning to show that he did n't more than half mean what he said.

Mr. Vernor roused himself as if from a deep reverie.

"Yes," he said thoughtfully; "you're a very lucky fellow, Verney." But Ellis felt instinctively that the remark had reference to something other than his chances to be famous.

CHAPTER VIII

MRS. GIBBS ON "RESPONSIBILITY"

HARRIET now saw a great deal of Carol Ellis. The two had taken a great fancy to each other, and it was through Carol that Miss Rand met Verney's friend, Mrs. Oliver Ordway, although the Politician, who had been anxious to have them know each other, had been largely influential in bringing the meeting about. It was to oblige Verney, too, that Mrs. Ordway had invited Harriet to a little theatre party she gave one evening, an invitation Harriet accepted unhesitatingly, in spite of her aunt's murmur of protest that she did n't quite like her niece to be so much with people she did n't know herself, although she admitted that the people in question were as nice as could be wished. Harriet, however, gently and persuasively contested this idea. It was sufficient, she thought, if she, Harriet, knew them. What was the use of being an heiress and twenty-four years old if you could n't do about what you liked? And as usual it ended in unqualified surrender on her aunt's part.

Mrs. Ordway made a very deep impression upon the young girl, who thought she had seldom seen any one more gracious and more interesting; and Agnes Ordway

The Politician

was both. Though all unacknowledged, the loneliness of her life — wife as she was to a man engrossed in politics to the exclusion of every other interest — had lent her lovely dark-blue eyes an infinitely pathetic expression. And her restless motions and quick manner of speaking would have betrayed to any one who knew the circumstances, her utter weariness of herself, her impatience of a fate which made no demand upon her many noble qualities, and her unconscious longing for that settled kind of life which is the truest aspect of domesticity, and which her husband's career as a public character made absolutely impossible.

There were only four in Mrs. Ordway's theatre party that Thursday night, Mrs. Ordway and Harriet, and Verney and his uncle, Richmond Vernor. Mr. Vernor, with his nephew, had the pleasure of knowing his hostess very well. Harriet was very much pleased when Mrs. Ordway called for her that evening, to find Mr. Vernor of the party, for she liked Verney's uncle, and, with her usual rather youthful but quite attractive enthusiasm, had continued to be pleased with everything that happened during the evening from the play to the *café* where they went for supper. It was a small place on the first floor of a building on the corner of Fortieth and Sixth Avenue, very popular just then for the purpose in spite of the noise from the elevated which roared outside its west windows. There was nothing very much out of the ordinary about it, however, except that often during the evening some

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

popular actress or singer of the day would be secured to vary the programme of entertainment furnished by a green-coated band at the end of the room.

As Mrs. Ordway and her party took their places, Harriet looked interestedly about her at the low-raftered ceiling bright with many colored lights, the bold design of the mural decoration, the waiters standing at attention by each table, and the crowd of nice-looking people with their distinctly on-pleasure-bent appearance.

"What a delightful place!" she said.

"It's very popular," said her hostess; "if it were a little later when everybody is back, we should have had to have a table reserved to find one unoccupied."

Yet in spite of the fact that "everybody" was not back the room seemed crowded enough, and many notables were represented. At a table to their right sat a thin-faced, freckled, light-haired woman dining with another woman and three men, to whom Mrs. Ordway bowed. Upon asking who she was Harriet was told that she was the recently divorced wife of a well-known millionaire, who had not been content with the charms of light hair and freckles alone. At another was a new comet of the theatrical sky who had lately "swam into public ken," and made a sensation, chiefly on the strength of having mastered the English language in eighty days, more or less, and her ability to wear impossibly high collars. At still another an Englishwoman, who had written a book much adver-

The Politician

tised by its immoral character, was dining with the actor whom she had persuaded to play the part of her loose-lived hero in a dramatized version, and the manager who was about to make, or was at least expecting to make, his eternal fortune by producing it.

"You can't tell, though, Agnes," remarked Verney, "whether the place will be as much patronized this season as it was last. That a thing's popular one year is no sign it will be the next year. Not in New York, at least."

"Perhaps not. I wonder if they'll have some singing to-night; it's so warm and pleasant I rather thought they would."

As Mrs. Ordway spoke, the attention of the party was attracted by a commotion of some sort at the street door. A man who looked like an Italian organ-grinder — slouch hat, dark flashing eyes, and generally picturesque appearance — seemed to be trying to get in, and a number of waiters to be trying to keep him out. Verney called a waiter and asked him what it was all about, and the man told them the organ-grinder was trying to get permission to sing to the people in the restaurant. "He says he has a fine voice and would like to entertain the ladies and gentlemen," explained the waiter. Hardly had the amusement subsided, which this singular request on the part of the organ-grinder had occasioned Mrs. Ordway and her party, when to their surprise they saw the Italian being escorted to the platform at the end of the restaurant.

After a brief speech in which the proprietor ex-

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

plained that he was induced to let the man have his way in the hope of providing his patrons with something new in the way of entertainment, the smiling street-musician stepped forward and in an excellent imitation of an Italian speaking broken English, told his now thoroughly expectant audience that he was sorry he had to leave his organ outside, — that, he thought, would have amused them more, but there was a little song they sang in his country he would like them to hear; and began without more ado to sing. It was a very beautiful song, and the singer's voice a marvel of expression and sweetness; and when the last chords of the accompaniment which the green-coated band had played throughout had ceased, the people understood, those who understood music at all, that they had been privileged to hear a performance of no ordinary merit but of unusual quality, and the applause was instantaneous and prolonged.

"He could beat the angel Israfel at his own game," said Verney, as the singer nodding and smiling came down from the platform and began to pass his hat, "but for all that I don't believe he's any organ-grinder; it's one of Antoni's put-up jobs." Antoni was the proprietor of the restaurant.

"You mean you think it's a fake?" said his uncle.

"Yes. Didn't you notice his hands? They were as white as a woman's, and you'll observe that he didn't keep the money he collected, but passed it over to Antoni there."

"I believe you're right," commented Mrs. Ordway.

The Politician

"Street musicians don't usually wear diamond rings, and he had one on his little finger."

"Oh, there's no doubt about it," said Verney; "it's just one of Antoni's little schemes to draw the crowd. You see if it is n't!"

And a paragraph in the paper the next morning proved the truth of his surmise and acquainted the world at large with the fact that Antoni had surprised his patrons again, and that a more or less well-known concert singer had consented for a "consideration" to disguise himself as an organ-grinder and give the diners in the restaurant one song.

It was toward the end of the little stir of excitement attendant upon this incident that three persons, a woman and two men, came in and seated themselves at the vacant table just to the left of Mrs. Ordway's party. As they took their places, Harriet was aware that she had seen the woman before; that faultless figure and pale gold hair were certainly familiar, likewise the deliberate stare of the fine dark eyes. It was only a moment, however, before she recognized her. "It's 'Cora'!" she thought, realizing that the woman at the other table was the same whom she had seen with Verney that evening at the theatre a night or two after her arrival in New York.

"There's Mrs. Willie Gibbs," said Ellis at that moment, nodding and smiling at the people who had just come in.

"With Mr. Gibbs," said Mrs. Ordway, "wonder of wonders!" bowing and smiling too.

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

"Oh, well, Stevie Cass is with her too," said Mr. Vernor; "don't forget that!"

"And Stevie is a nice boy," said Ellis, pleasantly, "and amusing too. And you know how amusing William M. Gibbs, bank president, is!"

Everybody laughed.

"Not that he is n't a very good sort," added Verney hastily, for fear he might be misunderstood to be "knocking" a friend of his; for he really liked Mr. Gibbs; then he lost interest apparently in the subject and in the next table, and devoted himself to Harriet. This he did so successfully that she forgot all about the troubled feeling she had had at sight of the irresistible "Mrs. Willie," and glowed and laughed and was so obviously interested in what the young man was saying, that Mrs. Ordway and Richmond Vernor exchanged significant glances once or twice in the midst of their own equable and intelligent conversation, and green flame shot from the hazel eyes of Mrs. Willie Gibbs at the sight, and poor Stevie Cass was unable to please her in any way he tried.

In a handsome apartment building on Madison Avenue near Fifty-sixth Street, a few evenings later, the beautiful Mrs. Gibbs sat in an attitude of expectancy. Her husband had gone to one of the numerous banquets which, as president of the New York Association of Bankers, he was obliged to attend, and she was free to spend her evening as she chose. That she chose to spend it in talking with a young and unat-

The Politician

tached bachelor some five years her junior was, she thought, no concern of Mr. Gibbs; and Mr. Gibbs thought so too; but his opinion on the subject was like a taste for Hokusai,—a matter of education, the result of a gentle course of training through which his wife had put him.

So finished a process was this training that the hard-working, money-making banker had come to the conclusion that it was his own original idea that a married woman should have all the liberty she wanted, and that as long as his wife was amused he did not at all care who amused her. If he had ceased to be able to amuse her himself, that was his own fault—a very broad-minded and unprejudiced theory, but not one that Mrs. Gibbs would have permitted him to apply to his own case. For him to have attempted to seek distraction beyond the confines of his own hearthstone would instantly have brought the roof about his ears. For it just happened to be true, in spite of her fondness for flirtation, that young Mrs. Gibbs loved her elderly husband. Perhaps, too, his confidence in this fact was the secret of his docility in the matter of permitting her to amuse herself with other men. If, however, he had been so foolish as to indulge in jealousy, of all the young men who took pleasure in the society of his handsome wife, James Vernor Ellis would have been the one to arouse the emotion.

The two, Mrs. Gibbs and the young man, had known each other since their school-days, and had always had the warmest kind of friendship, which at times hovered,

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

dangerously or delightfully, as you choose, near the borderland of flirtation, and in their very young days had come pretty close to being a love affair. Even as recently as the day when Mrs. Gibbs, as Miss Cora Keator, had told her friend of her engagement to the elderly banker, it was in the nature of a blow to Ellis's young affections. But when with grieved lips and a hurt look in his eyes, he had told her so, Miss Keator had only laughed and rubbed his hair the wrong way — a thing Verney particularly disliked and had always refused to let her do — and called him "a funny boy"; and then with cruel kindness had analyzed his true feelings in the matter with a penetration that was not to be denied, and showed him that the last thing in the world he really wished was to marry a woman five years older than himself. After the wedding she had spent a year abroad, during the first part of which Verney hardly had felt able to smile; but later on had come to realize that life was worth living even though Cora Keator was married; and by the time she and her husband had returned, he had so far recovered his usual equanimity that he had been the first person to greet them at the dock. Since when he had adapted himself to the new basis of friendship with the greatest cheerfulness and had been almost as devoted to the fascinating Cora as ever. Her marriage, he found, made no difference at all in her fondness for his society; and Mr. Gibbs was such a good sort he seemed rather to encourage Verney to see his wife than otherwise.

Cora Gibbs, for her part, had accepted the young

The Politician

man's devotion with equal satisfaction, though not in quite the same spirit. Womanlike, she was unable altogether to forget that there had been a time when things were different, when he cherished a warmer sentiment for her than mere friendship; and while she did not actually desire a conflagration, she was still anxious at least to keep the old fire lit.

The idea, then, that Verney was paying attention to Harriet Rand, was perhaps in love with her — which his absorption in her the other evening at the restaurant, a laughing word to that effect from Mrs. Ordway, and her own jealous fears all led her to entertain — was extremely distasteful to her. She could n't marry him herself certainly, and she would n't have wished to if it had been possible; nevertheless she did not want any other woman to marry him. In a word, she was just fond enough of him not to be able to imagine her world without Verney in it, and would have gone far to prevent its becoming so; for although sufficiently generous in other matters, she did n't care in the least how selfish she was about this particular young man, whose homage she had allowed to become indispensable to her happiness.

The truth was that Cora Gibbs belonged to that dog-in-the-manger class of married women who think nothing of binding a young bachelor to them by every art known to their sex, and then proceeding to make it their life's business to keep him from marrying, although they have themselves exercised that prerogative. This act of concentrated selfishness they disguise

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

under a professed interest in the welfare of the victim, urging upon him the inexpediency of marrying too young and by interfering here and advising there, generally succeed in tiding him along until the habit of bachelorhood becomes fixed upon him and he learns to look only to his worst enemy for all his joy.

It was on account of this selfish side of Mrs. Gibbs's friendship for Verney that she found the thought that he was on the point of breaking his chains so very hard to bear; for if her friendship had been of the right kind, she would have rejoiced in the event of his marrying happily. Her feeling of surprise that he had not at least confided in her regarding this recent fancy of his added also to her disturbed state of mind. But this was because she did not really know Ellis so well as she believed she did. She would have said, if any one had asked her, that so strong was the bond between them there was no thought the young man had of which she was not aware, and that he confided in her about everything. But she was mistaken. No woman ever really knows a man any more than any man ever really knows a woman; and Mrs. Gibbs, in supposing that Verney Ellis was hers to do with as she would, was only making the same mistake which any other woman no less intelligent would have made under the same circumstances.

As a matter of fact, Ellis was not at all the kind of man to fall a victim to the selfishness of the young married woman. He had far too much character, and the reason he didn't tell her all his secrets was not

The Politician

that he did n't have any to tell, but because they had nothing to do with her.

It was nearly nine, and the beautiful Cora looked very impatiently at the clock. Verney was late, just when she was most anxious to see him; for she meant to find out that very evening if there was any truth in Mrs. Ordway's gossip about the young man and the Chicago heiress. She made a very pretty picture with her yellow gown, white skin, and sparkling hair; and Verney arriving a moment later did not miss a detail of it.

"I thought you were never coming!" said she, rising to greet him and displaying her beautiful figure to much advantage in the act.

"I'm awfully sorry, Cora!" said Ellis, taking both the hands she gave him in graceful welcome and holding them for a moment; "but I could n't get here earlier. I'm so busy these weeks before the convention I really should not have come at all." A harassed expression passed over his face.

"Never mind, as long as you've come," returned the young married woman; "I waited dinner a little while for you, it's true, but it does n't matter a bit. Willie is the only person who minds when dinner is late, and he's dining out to-night."

"You must n't ask me again," said Ellis earnestly; "it's no use. I can never make it, and it only puts you out."

"Not in the least," replied Mrs. Gibbs tranquilly, "and we'll have some of it together anyhow." She

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

laughed, pressed an electric button, and on the appearance of the butler asked him to bring whiskey and soda.

Verney selected a low chair very near her and sat down. He knew he was going to enjoy the evening although he knew equally well that he should not spend it in that way, that the "Cause" was calling him; for his friend Ordway was not by any means so strong a possibility for the nomination as he would have liked to have him. But after all, why not? He was n't a slave; the laborer was worthy of his hire, and he had a right to take an evening off once in a while. And Mrs. Willie Gibbs was such good company! In her society he felt such a delightful sense of security, that he might say anything he chose, and his friend would understand. And he knew also — and expected much entertainment from the fact, that there was nothing Mrs. Gibbs, smart, sophisticated, and worldly-wise, dared not say. Also that she was at her daringest with him.

"Tell me something new," he said, sipping his whiskey contentedly and glancing at the evening paper she had laid down to greet him; "I have n't read the paper yet, I've been too busy."

"In other words 'Amuse me, slave'?" laughed Mrs. Gibbs.

"That's what I came for," he acknowledged.

"Well, there's nothing amusing in the paper," she told him; "not a thing in it, except that hogs are declining again! Disagreeable, rude things! I can't see

The Politician

why they should be so exclusive, can you?" She laughed at her own conceit and Ellis joined her.

"Oh, well," he said, "gossip then! Who's going to get divorced from whom?"

"Implying that I'm well up in scandal? It's too bad of you, Verney; you're always accusing me of that, and really, I don't gossip a bit."

"Not a bit — only a whole lot," returned Ellis cheerfully; "but I was n't criticising, Cora, you know that."

"You'd better not! But by the way, have you heard about Rolly Bristed?"

"No, what? I said I had n't read the papers."

"He's embezzled, speculated with the firm's money, and lost it. A cousin of mine who is an intimate friend of Mrs. Rolly's, told me. It's not in the papers yet."

"Though it will be before long if you have anything to say about it! But you don't really tell me Rolly's done a thing like that, really gone to smash in that fashion?"

"Yes, he's absolutely down and out, safe out of the country, as it happens. But the disgrace, think of it!"

"You don't say so! Poor fellow, I am sorry for him. And for his wife, too." Verney spoke with feeling. He knew the popular, likable young broker well. "How'd he happen to get so hard up? I knew he spent a lot, but then I thought he had it to spend."

"Oh, the usual thing!" replied Mrs. Gibbs nonchalantly, "fast women and slow horses!"

Ellis laughed.

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

"I guess that's summing up the case a little!" he said. "Poor Rolly!"

Mrs. Gibbs played with her empty glass thoughtfully.

"Yes," she said, "it is sad. One more good sport gone. But for all that, it happens to be the only thing that's new to discuss!"

"Excepting you. You're always new. Let's talk about you."

"I'd like to, but as a subject for conversation I'm nothing to talk about!"

"That's a pity," Verney said, "because I can't think of a better one. You won't let me talk about me, you know," he added whimsically.

That was true. Mrs. Gibbs in the "I'm-older-than-you-little-boy" attitude which she had chosen to assume toward this one of her many admirers — a dangerous attitude, by the way, in spite of the five years' difference in their ages, when indulged in by so fascinating a woman as she was, toward so fascinating a man as Verney Ellis — had long ago forbidden him to talk politics to her. She pretended the subject bored her, and even went so far as to poke fun at Verney's ambitions for political reform, taunting him with having caught the "new blood in politics" fever, as she called it, and refusing to take him seriously at all. And Verney liked it from her, and was glad she didn't talk about his work to him, just as he was glad that Harriet Rand did. It seldom follows that because a man likes a thing

The Politician

in one woman he likes it in all the others he knows. So he let Mrs. Gibbs jeer at him and his ambitions to her heart's content.

"Don't go," she said, as the young man after an hour of idle, intimate, delightful talk, reluctantly pleaded the necessity for his departure; "you have n't stayed a moment."

She leaned forward over the table toward him, her bright hazel eyes fixed upon him under their blue-veined lids.

Ellis hesitated, his glance unconsciously returning the fire of hers, but he spoke resolutely.

"I must," he said. "I have an appointment to meet a man at ten o'clock."

"I know who it is,—it's that old Cash Connolly you're always talking so much about!"

Verney laughed.

"How did you know?" he said. For it happened that Mrs. Gibbs's surmise was correct. Cash Connolly, a prominent District leader, was the man he was going to see, for Connolly had promised to talk with him about the possibility of swinging the Eighth District, of which he was supreme dictator, for Ordway, at the coming convention.

In previous talks Verney had been so eloquent in pointing out the advantages that would accrue to the Eighth and to its leader personally, should Ordway be established as the next Governor, that already the shrewd Irishman had committed himself so far as to

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

say "almost thou persuadest me," and Verney was hoping great things from the present interview.

"Really," his hostess added, "I'm quite jealous of that man!"

Verney rose. "You need n't be," he said; "you know that as far as mere pleasure is concerned, I'd much rather stay here."

"That's why you go, I suppose," said Mrs. Gibbs; and then, suddenly and impulsively, "don't go — yet. Stay just a moment until — until —" She stopped — they were both standing now, — and brushed a trace of cigarette ash from his sleeve, then let her hand, as if inadvertently, remain on his arm.

Ellis bit his lip hard, but betrayed no disquiet at her touch.

"Until what?" he asked.

"Willie said he was coming back from his banquet early," she said, removing her hand. "I told him if he would bring some one home with him I'd try and keep you for some bridge."

She spoke hesitatingly, her eyes on the floor.

Verney felt that she had not said what she had been going to say. Her plans for his entertainment did not usually include Willie.

"Would n't that be bully!" he said, ironically. "Now, what were you really going to say?"

Cora Gibbs laughed mischievously, a very devil of impudence of a sudden in her eyes. "I was going to say," she said, "don't go until you've told me whether

The Politician

you're in love with that Miss Rand from Chicago you were having such a good time with at Antoni's, the other evening."

Verney's face assumed its most reserved expression.

"What if I am?" he said.

"Nothing," she replied; "only I thought if you had really done anything so exciting as to fall in love, you ought to tell me about it! What's the use of being old friends if we don't tell each other things?" She looked up at him with innocent eyes.

Verney sat down again slowly, and Cora, inwardly triumphing that she had kept him — though the means was not to her taste — sat down also.

"What makes you think I'm in love with her?" he asked, beginning to select with much deliberation a cigarette from the box on the table.

"Oh, because you're so cross when I mention her name. Men are always cross when they're in love!"

"Surely some other reason?"

"Yes, besides that, Carol told me that you wrote to each other all the time when Miss Rand was in Chicago."

"Carol!" ejaculated Verney, roused to indignation by this evidence of spying on the part of his younger sister. "What on earth should she know about my affairs? Little fool!"

Mrs. Gibbs screamed with laughter, although it was a very pretty scream.

"There, now, I'm sure of it," she crowed; "or you

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

would n't get so angry. Where there's so much smoke, there must be some fire!"

Verney found the particular cigarette he seemed to have been looking for, and put it between his lips, unlighted.

"I'm not in love, just the same," he said, "with Miss Rand," he had difficulty in saying the name, "or any one else. You ought to know that. For the reason that I have told you more than once — that I don't intend ever to marry. And I don't intend to marry because I can't do that and keep in politics too. The demands made upon a man's time if he goes in for public life necessitate his giving up marriage altogether or neglecting his wife — and I'd rather give up marriage."

"Rather than your career? You prefer fame to love?"

"If you want to call something you think you ought to do a 'career,' yes."

"Something you think you ought to do? How do you mean?"

"I mean I think it's a duty to try and improve present day politics which are admittedly in a bad condition, are corrupt and impure, and that if I do what I can to accomplish that object I can be of service to the country." He spoke simply, as if patriotism were the virtue commonest to man, and looked at her as if he expected her to take as a matter of course his having it to such a degree. But she did n't, she could n't begin to understand an ambition so high and disinterested.

The Politician

"So you're not going to marry?" she repeated wonderingly.

"No."

"Never?"

"As far as I know. That is, if the present circumstances of my life remain the same."

"Never is a hard word."

"And human resolution reputedly weak?" He smiled.

"Yes," she said seriously.

And "yes" he agreed, serious himself.

"Then you admit there is a chance of your marrying after all?"

"If you insist. About as much as that I shall wake suddenly and find myself President instead of a hardly known politician at the beginning of his career, or that somebody will leave me a million!"

She laughed.

"Such satire!" she said; "yet after all neither of those things is impossible. They really might happen!"

"Before I die, perhaps."

The indifference of his tone did not escape her.

"And you're not wildly interested in your old age, are you, Verney," she said, understanding suddenly that to this intensely ambitious, energetic young man, the present was his whole life.

He shook his head.

"Not now," he asserted.

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

There was a pause, then she said musingly,

"It seems very hard, just the same, for a man as young as you are deliberately to plan to give up marrying! Isn't that sacrificing too much?"

She had spoken her true thought before she realized that in urging the Politician to marry she was doing just what she had intended not to do.

"It is hard," said Ellis thoughtfully. "But then," he added more lightly, "if a man will insist on having an ambition he should be willing to sacrifice something for it."

"Even a woman?" she asked, with peculiar significance.

"What do you mean?" he demanded, puzzled by her tone.

"Nothing to be short about, nothing very serious," she replied, settling back in her chair as if in preparation for a long talk and observing with satisfaction that Verney had laid aside his cane and put down his cigarette. "I only meant that if that's the case, if those are really your principles, you should be very careful indeed about your attitude toward women — the unmarried ones I mean!" She laughed.

He smiled too at her distinction in favor of married women, of which he had always been aware, though his mind was too much occupied with trying to understand what she was getting at, to make his amusement more than transitory.

"I'm still in the dark," he said.

The Politician

"About not letting them think you mean to marry them," said Mrs. Gibbs.

Verney stared at her a full half-minute; it took that long for him to grasp her idea. Then he laughed derisively.

"How foolish! As if they ever thought any such thing! I give them credit for more sense. The girls I know, at least. As for going around telling myself to be careful or some one will fall in love with me, why that's plain ridiculous. I'm not such a conceited ass, I hope."

"But you should," she said calmly; "you should do just that thing. Every man in the world that's worth looking at has that responsibility to face. If you don't know that, it's time you did. You're not a boy any longer, Verney."

She spoke kindly and very sweetly, with an apparently disinterested friendship that was surprising, unless of course she happened to have reasons of her own for not wishing him to remain longer in ignorance of his responsibility — unless she thought that to open his eyes to it now, would be to check his fondness for Harriet Rand's society before he had gone so far as to fall in love with her. Mrs. Gibbs, it must be understood, did not believe that Verney would be able to keep his resolution not to marry if he should ever really fall in love. But her words made no impression on the young man.

"I don't believe it a minute," he said impatiently, almost disgustedly. "Why have n't I ever heard about

Mrs. Gibbs on "Responsibility"

it before, about this 'responsibility' business, if there's really anything in it?"

"Because, my dear boy, you're unusually lacking in the vanity of your kind," returned his self-appointed instructress. "If you were not, you couldn't help seeing it. The more attractive a man is, the greater his responsibility, and you're very attractive, Verney."

He made a gesture of irritation.

"Well, I am not wall-eyed or half-witted, if you mean that," he said, "but I must say I've never thought I had the fatal gift exactly."

"Marvellous! Wonderful!" said Mrs. Gibbs under her breath. "Unique, absolutely unique in my experience of men!" Then aloud, "You ought to be put in a museum, then, as the only living example of a man without any egotism."

"You can make fun all you like," answered Verney, indifferently. "The fact remains that I don't take any stock at all in your extraordinary theory! What did I do with my cane?" He rose to go.

"It's true, though, and you'll understand it some day, I predict. Where are you off to now? To serve your country?"

"To see Connolly, as I told you," he replied shortly, nettled by her mocking manner. "I'm so late now I'll have to work all night, probably, to finish what I've got to do!"

"All right, General Grant!" she said, laughingly, and saluted the young man in pretended homage, "only don't take my head off about it, will you? It *shall*

The Politician

serve its country, as much as *ever* it likes. So there now!"

And Verney, realizing at once that it was a waste of time to try to talk seriously of his work to this irritating witch, laughed with her, although he knew it was at himself.

"That's a good boy!" said the witch approvingly. "Don't wait too long before you come again!" and she smiled her brightest at him as they parted.

But when the door had closed behind him her smile vanished, and the brow of the beautiful Mrs. Gibbs grew dark, and her expression very thoughtful. She sat down and leaned her head on her hand.

"He didn't like my asking him if he was in love with the girl!" she said aloud, "and he flushed when he spoke her name." She paused in her meditations, got up and walked restlessly around the room.

"I wonder if Agnes Ordway was right," she said, "I wonder if she was right!"

CHAPTER IX

TEMPTATION

IT was almost six of an afternoon not many days later, and although stenographers and clerks had long ago gone home, Verney was still sitting at his desk in his office in Nassau Street. He had a slip of paper in his hand, and seemed to scrutinize it as if he could not look at it long enough. There was n't much on it, the slip of paper — only a few figures, but it seemed to have the power to give pain; for as he gazed, Ellis's smooth face, which was already pale and weary, grew drawn, and he caught his under lip in his teeth with a cruel grip. Only a few figures stating the young man's liabilities and assets, but they stood for great anxiety and distress of mind; for upon investigating his exact financial standing he was shocked to find how much in excess of the latter the former were.

He had been worrying about his affairs for some time past, but the situation as disclosed to him that afternoon was worse than he had pictured it could be in his most pessimistic moments. His accounts were alarmingly short on the credit side and alarmingly long on the debit side, and the list of outstanding obligation to be met was appalling. He groaned in looking it over for the second time, and smiled a little bitterly,

The Politician

for most of the items were mementos of expenses incurred in putting through some reform measure in his district, or in connection with some campaign. The perfectly legitimate expenses incidental to running a political campaign are enormous, and if they were listed for the benefit of any one not familiar with the facts, would hardly seem credible; and Ellis, who never spared expense where a principle was to be upheld, and never let lack of funds prevent him from carrying out any scheme he was interested in, had been in the habit of putting his hand into his own pocket whenever the funds appropriated for the scheme ran low, as they very frequently did.

It was an ambition with him never, if he could help it, to let a good man lose an office for want of financial backing; and whenever a contingency arose which demanded that more money be spent or the battle lost, he spent the money, though it meant going without the luxuries of life, if not the necessities. As his principles would not permit him to take advantage of his chances to graft, and as the time he spent in the pursuit of politics was just so much time taken from the law, so that the income he derived from his practice was very small, the day had come, as he must have seen it would come had he not been too blinded by his enthusiasm for the work his soul loved, when continued indulgence in this reckless policy at last obliged him to face more or less straitened circumstances.

With little or nothing coming in, and all the money

Temptation

there was going out, it was hardly surprising that his arrears should eventually have brought him to an abrupt standstill. As he reckoned it, it would take about sixteen thousand dollars to cover his obligations and set him on his feet again. How was he possibly to earn so much money? Why, he could n't do it in a year unless — unless —

The late twilight had set in, and a big moon, chalk-white like the face of a clown, peered in at the young man from between two neighboring skyscrapers where it was neatly sandwiched, but Verney was n't looking at it at all. With a groan he dropped his face in his hands. The rest of his unfinished thought had come to him. He could n't possibly make sixteen thousand a year or anything like it unless he gave up politics and stuck to his practice alone. It would have seemed to any one of his acquaintances a reasonable and simple enough remedy, in fact, the only sensible thing a man in his position could do, but to the Politician it seemed the bitterest pill life had yet asked him to swallow. The generality of the phrase to "give up politics" particularized, meant that he must give up the leadership of his District, and in resigning that, he would be relinquishing his hold on the whole political fabric and would be putting himself out of the running for the chance of holding higher office.

Resign the leadership of his District! The thought was enough to make him groan. His District! His organization which looked to him for the salvation of

The Politician

its political soul; the trustful flock under his care, in shepherding which through campaign after campaign he had spent the busiest, most engrossing, most exciting hours of his life! He had worked like a horse for two and a half years, ever since he had completed his term as assemblyman at Albany, and now just as his District was in the best shape it ever had been in, he must leave it, it seemed — abandon it — give into other hands the men he had worked with so long, know their waywardness no longer, their devotion and loyalty no more. And for what a reason! Just for the mere lack of money, just that he might spend his time in the getting together of wretched, inanimate but necessary — ah, how necessary! — silver dollars.

For the same reason, he remembered, he had been obliged to refuse a judgeship a few years ago, because the salary that went with it was not so much as he could make in one year at his practice; and for the same reason he had been obliged to decline to return to the Legislature the year before last. That had been especially hard, for he had loved the life at Albany, and had been very much interested in the part he played in it as assemblyman. The sense of fighting, with great issues at stake on a busy day in the House, appealed to him; when men hurried up and down the aisles, pages ran hither and thither, and overwrought members at different desks besought the attention of the Speaker with vociferous voice and furious gesture; and the Speaker, his friend Ordway, calm-faced, cold-eyed, tapped patiently for order on the little square of marble in the corner of

Temptation

his desk. Also he had loved the quiet days when the House seemed to have been in session for months and there was little or nothing to do, and he had plenty of time to lean back from his desk and consider the passing of some new bill he was planning, and the assemblymen around him read newspapers, and the only sound to break the stillness was the voice of the reading-clerk. How much he enjoyed, in those days when he had been running for the office of assemblyman from his district, the excitement of the campaign! How interested in it all his mother and father had been, in spite of their reasons for opposing his going into politics! How eagerly they had followed the course of the campaign! How loyal and devoted, too, had been the butcher and baker and other tradespeople who looked after the welfare of the house of Ellis, how zealous to get their friends to vote for Mr. Verney! And his old nurse, who still lived with the family, and whom Verney had referred to since childhood as "Nanna," how anxious she had been for her favorite's success, how she had cried with joy when he himself brought her news of his election!

Poignant with pain as these reflections were now that he had begun to think they were all memories of the past and that such moments were never to be his again, Verney could not help smiling as he thought of the Scott brothers, who lived on Eighteenth Street, six young men who were great friends of his, and the ease with which he had, every election-time, talked them all into voting the straight Republican ticket, although

The Politician

they were all professed Democrats! He laughed aloud as he recalled how on the last occasion of the sort they had rebelled, in spite of the eloquent hours he had spent urging them to vote for the best man, no matter what party he belonged to, and that the best men that particular year were all Republicans — and they had refused to do anything of the sort. They were Democrats, they had said, as their father and grandfather had been before them, and they'd like to see Verney make 'em vote anything but the straight Democratic ticket! Thus they had sworn to him, and to each other, before they went to vote the morning of election day, but late election night, notwithstanding, each had gone home to the house on Eighteenth Street, removed his shoes before mounting the stairs, for fear of waking his brother, and crept shame-faced to bed; for each one in succession when he had actually come to the point of voting, had found himself somehow or other unable to go against Verney, and rather than offend him, each and all had climbed ingloriously on the band wagon and voted the Republican ticket.

But there were to be no more days like those; his political career was over, the chance to rise — to use a position of power for good — was gone; his great ambition to raise the standard of politics, to clear the reputation of politicians, was out of his power to realize. He groaned again as he thought of it, and the tears — there was no one there to see — started to his eyes and blurred the implacable row of figures on the paper before him and turned each separate one into a

Temptation

little dancing devil that shouted at him, "What are you going to do about me?"

For there is unfortunately no premium attached to the career of the honest, uncorrupt, high-minded man in politics. The only reward such public service has to offer is the opportunity for graft and that the man of integrity rejects, which is in itself an explanation of the corruption of present day politics. When public service must mean financial sacrifice few "good men" can afford to go into that kind of life; and the reason unprincipled men can afford to do so is that they go in for what they can get out of it. Here, for instance, was Verney Ellis, a young man whose only motive in entering politics was a patriotic one, to see what good he could do; yet because it was necessary for him to make money in order to live, he was forced to abandon his high ambitions and give up the life he loved. It seemed as if something were very wrong with the whole scheme of things, if it was possible that the lack of money should influence his career more than the country's need for right-minded men in public life; and yet apparently, in this case it was so. What a reproach to the richest country in the world!

Minute after minute passed while Ellis faced with what fortitude he could the terrible necessity of resigning the leadership of his District as the only means of saving the situation financially. If only he could think of another way out of it! Of something else he could do! He couldn't ask his father for the necessary sixteen thousand, considering Mr. Ellis's late

The Politician

business reverses; but he would not have stopped at shovelling coal if he might have raised the required sum by that means.

The moon, which had escaped from its trap between the tall buildings and now was showing its jolly clown's face far up in the sky, had begun to look less chalky and to take on a silver tone, filling Nassau Street with its early splendor, before the Politician raised his head from his hands, his problem solved. By the mercy of God, or by the inspiration of the devil, he was n't sure at the time which it was, another way out of his difficulty had been shown him.

"I must marry a rich girl!" he said softly, musingly, as he put away his papers and reached for his hat and gloves; then with sober face and slow step, he left the office and made his way up town.

Earlier that same afternoon, Harriet Rand was sitting in her room at the Holland House, deeply engaged in thought, and the subject of her thoughts was Vernor Ellis and his career — which her confidence in him assured her would land him eventually in the White House. Her aunt had gone out with Mrs. Chittenden, and Miss Rand was waiting for Carol Ellis to arrive, that engaging and vivacious young person having invited Harriet to go with her to a small tea given by Mrs. de Albert, a young married friend of Miss Ellis's.

"It's very informal — so few people are in town," said Carol, who had called for Harriet in due time, as she and her friend got out of the taxicab that had

Temptation

brought them to the door of Mrs. de Albert's house in Seventieth Street.

The confusion of laughter and talk in the room where the tea was going on halted for the fraction of a second as the two girls entered, and until the nine or ten women sitting and standing about, who all knew each other more or less intimately, assimilated the fact that the slight, large-eyed girl in dark blue with Carol Ellis was a stranger, and then the chatter flowed on evenly with polite indifference.

Carol introduced Harriet at once to their hostess, a young matron with a high color and a high voice, and Mrs. de Albert introduced them both to Mrs. Harris from California for whom the tea was given. After a few words with this very amiable lady, whose sole mission in life seemed to be to agree with people, and whose staple remark in conversation was "You're so right!" they moved on toward a sofa not far away from the tea-table where two or three attractive girls were sitting. Miss Ellis knew them all and soon made them acquainted with Harriet. Miss Gladys Leverich, who was one of them, Harriet thought particularly attractive. They were very busy talking and laughing while they drank their tea, when Miss Rand felt suddenly that some one was staring at her, and glancing up she encountered the brilliant hazel eyes of Mrs. Willie Gibbs.

Harriet stared back a moment in a casual, uninterested manner, then turned away her gaze. A little later,

The Politician

Carol, who had left her friend with Gladys Leverich while she spoke to some one who had just come in, seized upon Miss Rand and began introducing her right and left in her informal, jolly way, and almost before she knew it the girl found herself face to face with Mrs. Gibbs who was, she felt in a subtle, intuitive way, inimical to her.

"Mrs. Gibbs," said Carol introducing them, "do you know Miss Rand?"

"She's very handsome," thought Harriet to herself, a kind of regretful quality in the admission in spite of herself; and "How pretty she is!" thought Cora Gibbs, "much prettier even than I imagined at first."

And then, drawn to each other, in spite of their mutual feeling of distrust, by the knowledge that each was interested in the Politician, they sat down in adjoining chairs and began to talk. After a few minutes' conversation, however, Harriet found that she could not get on at all well with Mrs. Gibbs. She was rather amusing, the young heiress thought, and she said a number of clever things, but they had a doubtful flavor about them. Things Harriet would never have thought of laughing at herself, Mrs. Gibbs apparently seemed to think excruciatingly funny.

"It's a pity you didn't come to New York when the season was on, when there were dances and things," she told Harriet. "Hardly any one is home now. These women you see to-day are here only temporarily, between visits in the country or to do some shopping,

Temptation

or something. If I were n't getting ready to go abroad next month I should n't be here myself."

Harriet said she didn't especially care for dances and things. She had been to so many at home, and she supposed they were much the same. New York was interesting to her, in season and out, and it was the best time to shop when there were fewer people in town.

The first portion only of her remarks caught Mrs. Gibbs's attention. "Don't care about dances?" she said; "well, that is strange! But I think you would, and I think you'd find them different, if you went to one in New York. I never will forget one of the Friday evening cotillions that Billy Vandewater led — a very attractive fellow, by the way, you must meet him, — the horse-and-driver figure, particularly!"

"Did it go so well?" enquired Harriet perfunctorily, not a bit interested.

"Go well?" repeated the light-hearted and beautiful Cora Gibbs, laughing delightedly at the very remembrance; "my dear, it was a regular romp! No place for lisle stockings, I assure you!"

Miss Rand, though she could not help getting an immediate and vivid impression of the figure in question from this vigorous and descriptive line, was not in the least amused by it, and made no attempt to reply; she felt justified by its questionable taste in letting her attention wander to the other people in the room. Her averted head, however, did not seem to bother Mrs.

The Politician

Gibbs a bit, who continued to prattle happily on as if she had the most interested of auditors.

So it happened that Harriet presently found herself listening without intending it, to a conversation between a woman standing near her, whom she did not know, and Gladys Leverich. She had been hearing what they said without exactly taking it in, when a sentence from Miss Leverich caught her attention. In a momentary pause that seemed to come in the talk all over the room, she heard the New York girl's high sweet tones saying, "Ask Verney Ellis, he told me so himself."

"What did Verney Ellis tell you?" asked Mrs. Gibbs (she also had heard) serenely enough but insistently nevertheless. "Tell us, won't you, Gladys?"

Apparently Miss Leverich's answer to this question was of interest to every woman in the room, for no other conversation was continued.

"Why, he said," replied the young girl, "that if Oliver Ordway were nominated Governor they might nominate him for Attorney-general!"

"Really? How perfectly fine!" came the chorus from every part of the room, and Harriet perceived, and not without a certain pang, that Ellis was very well known to all these women.

"That's nothing new," remarked Mrs. Gibbs carelessly, while Miss Rand realized still more acutely, as the beautiful Mrs. Willie made the remark, that it was not such a distinction to be friend and confidante to Verney Ellis as she had imagined. "It's been talked

Temptation

about a long time," continued Mrs. Gibbs; "he told me years ago!"

She rose as she spoke and picked up a magazine from the table and began to glance through it as if the subject no longer interested her. Mrs. de Albert, who knew Cora Gibbs very well, came over to her and laid her hand on the other woman's shoulder.

"Peevish, Cora?" she whispered loudly; "but never mind, you ought to know Verney Ellis by this time! I don't believe there's a woman in New York worth knowing that he has n't confided in at one time or another."

"I'm sure I don't care," returned Cora, wriggling from under her would-be consoler's hand, and continuing to turn the leaves of the magazine.

Mrs. de Albert, who perhaps had not been so anxious to soothe her friend as to amuse herself, went away laughing, to greet a newly arrived guest; and Harriet, who had heard, moved away too, with a sense that she was n't having a good time at all, and a wish that she had not come.

In reality it was nothing out of the way or at all discreditable to him that Ellis should have known all these women well — rather a compliment, on the contrary, for they were all nice and as a group unusually attractive; but to Harriet, who did n't understand his attitude in the matter of having women friends — which, briefly defined, was a feeling that in numbers lay safety — the idea that her hero was everybody's hero came as a revelation that was also something of a blow.

The Politician

When you're trying to put some one on a pedestal, it makes you feel chagrined to find that he's already there without any of your help. She was therefore very glad indeed to see that the person whom Mrs. de Albert had gone forward to greet was Mrs. Ordway. Now she would really enjoy herself after all, she thought, going up to the young Speaker's wife. For she really liked Mrs. Ordway and wanted her for a friend. Mrs. Ordway for her part, seemed very glad to see Harriet, and they were soon absorbed in a discussion of art, in which both were interested.

"You must come and see my studio," said the older woman when she found that Harriet had one herself in her home at Lake Forest. "I spend a great deal of time there. Mr. Ordway is away so much."

"I should like to come very much," replied Harriet, "although I can't pose as being any sort of critic. I love the work, but I don't do as much as I should, or so my aunt says."

"Oh, but you must!" returned Agnes; "it's a shame to hide your light, to have a talent and not use it. It's ungrateful, I think."

"To Providence for giving it to you?"

"Yes. Having it confers an obligation, you know."

"If it's a very great talent," returned Miss Rand, "but for myself I rather hate to run the risk of adding anything to the mediocrity of the world, there's so much of it already."

"That's true, of course," said Mrs. Ordway, her face

Temptation

— which had the young look that married women often have who have had no children — very thoughtful, “but you see I have so little to occupy my time, and I *must* keep busy about something!” There was a passionate intensity in her tone.

Harriet, who did n't understand her friend's loneliness and the reason for it, was wondering what she meant by saying she had to keep busy about something, so long as she had her husband's career to be interested in, and might perhaps have asked the other to explain, when their conversation was broken in upon by the gay voice of Mrs. Gibbs.

“Don't stand there and talk, you two, in that dreadfully serious, exclusive fashion,” she said; “I know it's something terribly intellectual, I can tell by your faces, and we've got something *so* exciting to talk about over here!”

Mrs. Ordway and Harriet looked over there and saw that the crowd had thinned out, leaving a small group sitting in a confidential ring around the tea-table.

“What's your exciting subject, Cora?” Mrs. Ordway said, smiling at Mrs. Gibbs, as she and Harriet joined the group.

“It's a question,” said Mrs. Gibbs, standing in the middle of the circle of women, her face flushed and mischievous, a cigarette between her first and second fingers. “We're trying to decide what a woman marries a man for!”

It was the time of day most dear to the woman who

The Politician

makes a business of amusing herself, when the stress of the afternoon's gayeties is past and those planned for the evening are still far enough away to permit of a few moments of relaxation before the duty of dressing again presents itself. A delightful sense of peace, of leisure with no immediate necessity of hurrying anywhere for some time yet, pervaded the room. A big yellow lamp stood sentinel by the sparkling tea-table with its dainty freight of liqueur glasses and teacups, and slender forms with comfortably crossed knees leaned gracefully back in the chintz-covered chairs. Voices were low and laughter was frequent, while white fingers made frank excursions to the big silver-rimmed glass bowl on the table where Mrs. de Albert kept her cigarettes.

Harriet had never approved of the habit of smoking for women, and was very glad to see that Mrs. Ordway refused the cigarettes when they were passed to her. It was very lucky that Harriet Rand did not have to depend on her drawing for her living; she was too fond of the conventions to have made a good Bohemian. She was also, however, too wise to criticise where she was not called upon to do so, and too truly kind and generous to be intolerant; so she refused them herself with a smile and did not explain that she never smoked.

"What do you marry a man for?" repeated Mrs. Ordway, "that's easy: So you won't be lonely in your old age!"

She smiled bravely around her as if to defy any one

Temptation

to say that if that had been her ambition in marrying, it did not look so far as if it stood much chance of being gratified.

"I don't agree," said Mrs. Gibbs. "Who cares what happens when they're old?" She looked as if she did n't, certainly, with her splendid spirits and warm, brilliant beauty.

"Next?" she said looking questioningly round the circle of laughing faces.

Gladys Leverich rose to the occasion. "To have little thrills run up and down your spine when your eyes meet his," she declared.

A smile went round the ring, and every woman looked at the other, as if to say "We know she's right, but do we dare say so?"

"I don't care, that is the reason!" insisted Gladys, perceiving that her idea was to get no support, and compelled to uphold it herself.

"To have a strong shoulder to cry on!" drawled a sophisticated-looking young person with ironic emphasis.

"Oh, Amy! How can you be so silly?" they all exclaimed, laughing. That idea, as they knew its author intended it to do, seemed most ridiculous of all to this smart, alert, self-reliant group of women, as typically independent as the modern woman can be.

An older woman with good-humored eyes, who had been married a long time and whose talent for listening patiently to other people's troubles made her beloved of

The Politician

young women and old, made the next suggestion. "To have children," she said with a vanquished smile that anticipated the storm that followed; for a chorus of protest and expostulation and even derisive laughter greeted her remark.

"The idea!" said every one, and turned hastily to the next reader of the riddle. This was the guest of honor, Mrs. Harris.

"Because no one else has asked you," she said simply, and realizing from the very look of her that she meant it, their laughter rang.

"Or because your mother made you," said a dark-faced young married woman with a habitually discontented expression. This solution was passed quickly by, however. Everybody knew that poor Martha Wotherspoon, who had lately become Mrs. Reid Kennard, had married the man of her mother's choice—who was twice her age but fabulously wealthy—instead of her own choice, a nice young man without a cent.

"Come, come!" said Mrs. Gibbs impatiently looking round at the women who had not yet answered, "this will never do! Every county must be heard from, or we'll never discover the answer! How about it, Connie Wilde? What does a woman marry a man for?"

"For fun!" replied Miss Wilde, who was exceedingly pretty but did not look as if she had a sensible idea in her head.

"To get married!" suggested Mrs. Underhill, a smart-looking young matron who sat next to her;

Temptation

“that’s what most women do it for, I think. At least when I look at some husbands that’s the only explanation that occurs to me.” She laughed satirically.

Mrs. Harris rolled appreciative eyes at the speaker. “You’re so right!” she said.

Whereupon Bessie Underhill seemed very much amused — perhaps because she had happened to meet Mr. Harris and had set him down at once for one of the husbands to be explained in that way; for she laughed so hard that she grew almost hysterical and had to have another *crème de menthe* to quiet her.

Harriet could n’t stand it any longer, she thought it was all too silly for anything, and the frivolous treatment of the sacred subject of marriage quite unworthy. She did n’t realize, not knowing these women well, that their frivolity was only the mood of the moment, the result of the irresponsible nature of the hour, and their sense of relaxation; for most of them were in reality women of character.

“I don’t think any one has given the right answer to your question, Mrs. Gibbs,” she said boldly and very gravely. “I think that what you marry a man for is to help him! To do all you can to make him succeed in his work — in his career.”

It was a brave thing to do, to express an opinion that was in the nature of a rebuke in a gathering where she was so little known, but the courage of her convictions was something Harriet did not lack. Amazed silence followed this speech for a moment; then the older woman who had ventured to speak in behalf of the chil-

The Politician

dren, said sweetly: "I agree with you, Miss Rand. We *were* getting too silly; but, of course, we all really feel that way about it, too."

A murmur of assent corroborated this statement, and pleasant glances were cast in the direction of the Chicago girl who was not afraid to speak her mind, though her opinion had been cast in such serious mould as to check the spirit of levity in which the others had been giving theirs. They did not altogether relish being rebuked, but they could not help admiring the rebuker for her courage.

There was a general movement to go, and Mrs. Ordway as she rose, by way of restoring to the atmosphere the ease of the moment before, reminded Mrs. Gibbs that she had not yet been heard from on the subject of the afternoon's discussion.

"What do you think we marry a man for, Cora?" she asked.

Mrs. Gibbs put her finger to her brow, as if in deep thought, then threw wide her hands in a gesture of despair.

"I'm sure I don't know!" she said.

A few moments later, as Harriet and Carol, who were among the first to go, were standing on the steps waiting for their cab to arrive, the former heard a swift whisper at her shoulder, and turning, found Mrs. Ordway's face close to hers.

"My dear," said Agnes Ordway very low and hurriedly, "what you said about marrying to help a

Temptation

man was quite right, is quite true as a general thing, but not in the case of a man whose work is politics." Her blue eyes sought Harriet's dark ones with a certain intensity of expression. "Don't marry a politician," she repeated warningly, "if you want to help," and swept away to her automobile.

Although Harriet did not understand the warning at the time, or what had prompted it, it was given, as a matter of fact, because Mrs. Ordway had divined that Harriet had had Verney Ellis in mind in saying that the reason a woman married a man was to help him in his career, and that Harriet thought she could help him; and the married woman wanted to save her friend from discovering as she had done in her own case, that she would not be allowed to help. For Mrs. Ordway's own experience had been of the sort to make her feel that, contrary to the custom of the Englishman, who never thinks of excluding his wife from any part of his affairs, in this country the last thing a man wants to do, is to make his wife his confidante in business matters, and that this was especially true if his business happened to be politics. Even if he had the inclination to take her into his confidence, she had come to the conclusion he hadn't the time, so tremendous is the activity necessitated by a political career in the United States.

When Miss Rand reached the Holland House that afternoon, which was not until half past six, she found that Verney Ellis had called in her absence. Her

The Politician

aunt's voice from an inner apartment apprised her that the card was on the table in their reception room and that Mr. Ellis had only just gone. Harriet picked it up with a feeling of keen disappointment.

"He must have stopped on his way up from the office," she thought. "How too tiresome I missed him!"

CHAPTER X

“WHO KNOWS BUT THE WORLD MAY END
TO-NIGHT?”

THE first of September was on Saturday, and on that afternoon there was to be an open-air horse-show not far from New York, for which Mrs. Ordway had made up a party and invited Harriet Rand. The others who were going were Carol Ellis, Gladys Leverich, Gerald Merrick, and, of course, Verney. The latter had offered to drive them out by coach, the coach in question belonging to a friend of Ellis's for whom he often drove; and Mrs. Ordway was very much pleased with the idea; so it was a great disappointment when the young man telephoned her at the last moment that he would be unable to go after all. It was only two weeks to the convention, and he was very busy, he told her. He was sorry not to have them go out by coach, but if she wished he could get some one else to drive. Mrs. Ordway, too irritated with him to flatter him by explaining that she did n't want any one else, told him that she had changed her plans anyway, and proceeded to take her guests out by motor.

“That's the worst of knowing the boy so well,” she said ruefully; “he thinks he can fail me at the last minute like that, and that it does n't matter a bit!”

The Politician

"It does n't," said Harriet serenely. They were in their box at the horse-show. "Oh, look at those bays; I like them far the best!" She called Gerald Merrick's attention to an unusually fine pair of harness horses just passing.

She had been at many such exhibitions, but because of her great love of horses, such shows never lost their charm for her, especially when they were given in the open air. People passing in the promenade nodded and smiled at Mrs. Ordway's party or came in to talk; but although a number of them were known to her, Harriet's interest still was centred in the green-hedged ring with the judges' stand in the middle. She had come to see the horses, not the people. That is not saying that the people were not worth seeing, for it was an unusually smart assemblage, and with the show horses and liveried attendants in the ring, the group of booted and spurred horsemen about the judges' stand, the green-roofed boxes from which the purple and yellow colors of the club floated, made a brilliant picture under the bright September sun.

It was only when Mrs. Gibbs stopped to speak to them, very beautiful in an elaborate costume of lavender shaded by a lavender parasol, with an admirer at each elbow, that Harriet was able to withdraw her gaze from the tourney in front of her, where the flower of equine chivalry in burnished armor of black, brown, and bay, broke lances with each other for the favor of the judges.

The World May End

"Hello!" said Cora Gibbs, one lavender shoe on the step of the box, her color deep rose, her eyes warm and lustrous under the shadow of a small bed of pansies which had been cleverly metamorphosed into the form and semblance of a hat, and which graced her head with such exquisite sympathy for the gold of her hair that the artist in every human being that beheld it, whether envious woman or admiring man, bowed down in homage.

"Where's Oliver, Agnes? Could n't he come?" she said, nodding to Harriet, and to the two young men in the box, who had sprung to their feet.

"No," smiled Agnes; "he never comes to things like this, you know; he has n't time."

"And Verney Ellis? I thought you told me he was going to be with you."

"He was," replied Mrs. Ordway as sweetly as before, "only something prevented at the last moment."

"What a bad Verney!" said Mrs. Gibbs, arching her brows significantly at Harriet. "I should speak to him if I were you, Miss Rand."

And before Harriet could decide whether to refute by speech or silence this public imputation that she was directly concerned with the actions of Verney Ellis, Mrs. Gibbs had turned to Mrs. Ordway with a change of subject.

"Are you going to exhibit to-day?"

"Yes, my hunter Tybalt," replied Agnes Ordway, who owned some fine horses, "in the jumping class."

The Politician

"That comes next," observed Harriet, consulting her programme.

"And I see the groom walking him about over there beyond those carriages," added Mrs. Ordway. "I think I'll go and see how he is!"

"Let me go with you, Mrs. Ordway, do!" entreated Harriet, who was anxious to see her friend's horse, but more anxious not to be left with Mrs. Gibbs, who had settled down in the box.

They found Tybalt in excellent spirits, but Stephen, the groom, had bad news for his mistress. It seemed the young woman, a professional who was to have ridden the horse, had sprained her ankle in dismounting from another horse and had only just been taken to the club-house.

"She's in too much pain to ride, they say, Mrs. Ordway," said the man.

Mrs. Ordway looked much taken aback.

"How terrible!" she said. "I haven't time to get any one to take Miss Bush's place. We are in the next class, and I *can't* ride myself,—I've never ridden at a horse-show."

"I have," said Harriet, who had made up her mind immediately to help her friend out of her difficulty; "I've done it lots of times at home."

"Can you? Will you?" implored Mrs. Ordway, all hope at the suggestion.

Harriet replied by signalling a carriage standing near.

"We'll just have time," she said, as they got in,

The World May End

“to drive to the club and get that habit off Miss Bush before they call our class.”

The carriage raced to the near-by club-house and in an incredibly short time the moaning Miss Bush was divested of a correct and very good-looking habit, and they were back at the ring, Harriet appearing very handsome in her borrowed plumes and not a bit flurried by her haste in donning them.

“Has he any tricks?” she asked Stephen as he took her boot in his hand for the mount.

“Hold him hard when he is coming up and let him have his head when he lands,” replied the man.

And with that, Harriet went on her way to the ring.

“Who’s that?” asked a young man who arrived at the horse-show just as she entered. He touched with his light cane a groom lounging on the rail as he spoke.

“I swear to the Lord if it is n’t Harriet!” next said the late arrival, who was Mr. Verney Ellis, without waiting for the man’s “I don’t know, sir.”

The explanation of the young man’s appearance on the scene at that late hour, after he had definitely told Mrs. Ordway that he was too busy to go, lay in his reason for changing his mind about going in the first place. It was all the result of a revulsion of feeling following his resolution to marry a rich girl as a means of extricating himself from his financial difficulties without abandoning his beloved politics. On the impulse of the moment, spurred on by that dark hour in his office, he had called on Harriet with the vaguely

The Politician

defined purpose of beginning the campaign for her favor at once, and on finding that she had gone out, his real nature asserted itself, and he left the hotel shuddering at the mere thought of the thing he had been about to do. So intense was his self-contempt — indeed, his horror — that he, Verney Ellis, should have sunk even during the space of a passing mood to the level of those despicable beings who marry for money, that he could not telephone Mrs. Ordway quickly enough to excuse himself from her party to the horse-show. To keep out of Harriet Rand's way and avoid her at every opportunity he had resolved should be his greatest care hereafter, so that he might never have even the chance so to accuse himself again.

This was in the morning, but by one o'clock he had changed his mind again, and, realizing that such an extreme measure was only the result of his guilty conscience, he decided that it would not be necessary after all to forswear Harriet's society absolutely in order to keep his self-respect, and that he would take the 1:30 train to the country and join Mrs. Ordway's party. He knew his friend Agnes well enough, he thought, to make the uncertainty of his political engagements a sufficient excuse for his indecision in regard to accepting her invitation.

The horses were lined up in the centre of the ring, near the judges' stand, while the various attendants in purple and yellow livery busied themselves erecting the barriers in preparation for the jumping which was to come next. Harriet was perfectly calm and confident.

The World May End

Tybalt suited her exactly, and she felt that she would understand him, although he needed very delicate hands to keep him from dancing and fussing.

"Easy, boy, easy," she said softly to the one pointed ear pricked back toward her as it came her turn to jump and she and Tybalt left the safe shelter of the judges' stand. As she cantered slowly around the ring a number of people who had not noticed her before broke into admiring ejaculation. In the first place Mrs. Ordway's horse was a superb animal; and Harriet's steady seat, the easy, hardly perceptible sway of her slight figure to his canter, and the beautiful set of her shoulders, were things worth noticing. The fact that so few people knew her aroused interest as well, and as she encountered the first gate in her path every one was busy asking who the handsome girl with the black eyes on the bay horse could be.

The first time around the ring Harriet accomplished both jumps with no difficulty, a burst of applause indeed testifying to the fact that Tybalt had not so much as touched either of them, but the second time she had trouble with the last jump. Either Tybalt had become excited by his triumph, or had allowed the applause to get on his nerves, or else had decided that three successful efforts of the kind was enough for that day. Whatever the reason, he mortified Harriet and disappointed the spectators, with whom he was a prime favorite, by refusing the jump.

Once more his rider galloped him back, and wheeling, put him at the bars, and once more he balked in a dis-

The Politician

agreeable and emphatic manner, sitting down on his haunches with his nose touching the greens with which the bars were decorated.

The third attempt, Harriet, whose blood was up and who was excited enough by now, made with the determination to get the horse over or die. She knew he could do it; he should not do himself and his rider and his owner the injustice of failing. She had been patient and coaxing before, but now she threw such mild measures to the winds and taking Tybalt well up by the head struck him smartly with her whip. The horse, who had been prancing along as belligerently as if he were the Tybalt of Shakespeare looking for a chance to get under Mercutio's guard, reared suddenly under the blow, and then to Harriet's satisfaction settled down to a steady gallop.

But the last jump was evidently not destined to be successful, for just as he neared the gate and was taking off, an attendant stepped forward in a belated attempt to place one of the bars more securely, and Tybalt, taking fright, rushed the jump without rising enough and crashed heavily through the bars, throwing his rider some distance.

A murmur of consternation rose from the boxes as Harriet struck and lay still, and men came running from all sides. The first person to reach her, however, was Verney Ellis, who from a point near at hand had been watching with the deepest anxiety her efforts to get the bay horse over the last jump, and who had vaulted the hedge that enclosed the ring the second

The World May End

the accident happened, and had run to her side at top speed, swearing with heart-felt earnestness as he ran.

But in spite of his hurry, horse and rider were both up by the time he arrived, and when he saw that Harriet was not hurt, he seized her arm and gave it a shake.

"What did you want to do that for?" he said, his eyes flashing. "You might as well kill a man as scare him to death!"

But Harriet saw that his face was pale, and in spite of his roughness a great gladness welled up in her heart because she knew that he was moved — that he would have cared a great deal if she had been killed.

"I'm not hurt," she said, smiling faintly; and then, to the mixed assemblage of grooms, spectators, and judges, "is the horse all right?"

Tybalt was,—absolutely uninjured, marvellously enough,—and upon perceiving this, Harriet took the reins from the panting animal's neck, and turning to Verney said coolly, "Put me up."

"Put you up?" he repeated, staring. "Well, I should say not! Do you think I would let you ride him again after a close call like that?"

"Certainly," she said. "I'll have to try it again, you know."

"But you might have been killed!" he expostulated.

She looked him straight in the eye. "You don't want them all to think me a coward, do you? You'd do it yourself in my place, you know you would."

She had appealed to the right chord in Verney, his admiration for nerve, and he put her on her horse

The Politician

again without another word. A burst of hand-clapping as Harriet made ready for her last attempt to get over the fourth jump showed that the spectators shared Verney's admiration; and when the feat was finally accomplished with great ease and in perfect form, the applause and enthusiasm were unbounded.

That night at the dance which was given at the clubhouse and for which many New York people, including Mrs. Ordway and her guests, stayed over night, Harriet was the centre of attention. Her accident and courage that afternoon had won her notice from every one; and then, too, the news that she was an heiress had spread about, and an heiress is an heiress, whether she comes from Chicago or New York.

Verney from his place among the stags at one end of the room noticed gloomily and with unjustifiable irritation that she was in danger of being the most popular girl in the room. It was very hard to see all those Johnnies out on the floor falling all over each other to get a dance, when he knew that he would have had no difficulty at all in getting one if he had allowed himself to ask. But he would n't. That was just the point. For in order to prove to himself that he had entirely and completely conquered the temptation to try to get himself a rich wife, which had assailed him the other afternoon in his office, he had set himself to the task of not dancing with Harriet that evening. But though he had succeeded so far in his determination that he had let half the evening go without so much as speaking to her, he found that he was

The World May End

quite unable to dance with any one else. Even the fascinating Mrs. Gibbs failed to move him from his place in a group of men where he stood with folded arms and set lips, staring morosely out over the whirling ballroom in a vain attempt not to see the wistful glances which Harriet, ignorant of the reason for such conduct and expecting much after the feeling he had displayed at the time of the accident, sent him from time to time over the heads of a ring of admirers.

Cora Gibbs began by ridiculing him and ended with blandishment; but Achilles steadfastly refused to stop sulking and dance with her, and she eventually went away in a rage on the arm of a delighted partner. Verney's misery at last became so apparent that it attracted the attention of one Billy Vandewater, a man of good family, bad reputation, and attractive personality.

"Why weep ye by the tide, laddie; why weep ye by the tide?" he carolled sympathetically, strolling up to where Verney stood.

"Not dancing to-night," Ellis replied shortly.

"No?" said Vandewater. "Anything the matter with your legs, or is n't She here?"

"Wrong again," said Verney ferociously (he was just waiting for some one upon whom to avenge his quarrel with fate, and Vandewater, although he knew him very well, had been almost impertinent); "I'm not dancing because I thought you would be and I could then avoid talking to you."

The other stared a little, surprised by such warmth,

The Politician

and then remarked coldly, "Nice little temper you've got, Ellis. But I won't trouble you any longer with my presence if you'll present me to that Miss Rand from Chicago they're all making such a fuss about. I saw you talking to her this afternoon at the show when she was thrown."

"You want to meet her?" asked the Politician, his eye side-wise as if he were considering the proposition favorably.

"That's about the size of it," assented Vandewater expectantly.

"Well, you can't!" announced Verney violently; "I won't present you or anybody like you! Ahoy there! Gladys!" he added, addressing Miss Leverich, who happened along at this moment with a stout, bald-headed man in tow.

Gladly the young girl came to a halt. Vernor Ellis was an ideal of hers, and she had been promenading on one excuse or another between every dance directly in front of him all the evening in the hope of realizing a dance with him.

"Where did you come from?" she asked, as if she had only just seen him.

"I've been waiting for a dance with you," said Verney. "May I have the next?"

"But it's mine," interposed the bald-headed one: "we were only waiting for the music to start."

"So was I," said Verney, placing a tentative arm about Miss Leverich's waist as he saw that the musicians were about to begin to play, and before her rightful

The World May End

partner could interfere, he had glided away with his prize to the strains of a waltz.

"Upon my word," said Bald-head, goggling after them, "if Ellis has n't got his nerve!"

Gladys Leverich, little curly-headed thing with pointed chin perpetually in motion and large and lambent eyes, exerted all her powers to entertain her partner, whose piratical method of obtaining the dance was just to her taste, and more or less succeeded. After all, Verney thought, it would n't do to mope with the men all evening. He must dance and have the appearance of enjoying himself or his abstinence might be attributed by Harriet to its true cause.

"I can always tell a debutante from a girl who has been out a year or two," he said to Miss Leverich. "Can't you?"

"Why?" asked Gladys, giggling expectantly.

"By the way they treat their partners at a cotillion. A debutante never wastes time talking to the partner she's with, but spends it gazing out over the sea of dancers, Penelope-wise, in quest of Ulysses with a favor, perched on the edge of her chair already to spring. Men as individuals don't interest her, only collectively, as a means of proving to the other debutantes how popular she is."

Miss Leverich laughed. "And the girls who have been out a season?"

"Ah, they're different! They've got some sense! That's why I'd rather dance with them [this was Gladys's second year], they know their business bet-

The Politician

ter, stick to the bird in the hand, you know, and devote every energy to making him think he's the one and only real thing."

"But what good does it do her? What is the result?"

"The result, dear child," said Verney, looking down at her as they danced, with his wisest, most elder-brotherly look, "is that *her* partner comes back for another dance and the debutante's partner does n't."

"Will *you*, do you suppose?" asked Miss Leverich pointedly. Verney said he would,—and did. Several times. Dancing after that, first with his sister, and then with a covey of the debutantes whose methods he had just been deriding; his sparkling eye, quick smile and the spots of color on his cheek bones lending his assumed gayety such an appearance of reality that Harriet, when her partners gave her time to think of anything else, observed it with amazement not unmingled with reproach.

How could he have such a good time without once dancing with her? Had she mistaken his interest in her, then? It was inexplicable.

Ellis having run off a string of three or four buds in succession, had asked a young matron whom he had only just met, to dance,—when he caught sight of Harriet dancing for the second time with Billy Vandewater, who had managed to get introduced without Verney's help. The sight put the finishing touch to his ill-humor, occasioned by his resolve not to dance with her himself, and his chafing spirit broke its bonds

The World May End

at last. With manifest confusion but great firmness nevertheless, he excused himself from dancing with the young matron on the ground that he was suddenly feeling very ill, and murmuring something about "hoping for another chance," left her and sped over toward Harriet.

The girl had stopped dancing and she and Vandewater were standing by a *frappé* table when Verney came up. She looked very lovely in her gleaming gown with pearls on her throat. The enviable distinction possessed by one girl in ten of looking as well at the end of a dance as at the beginning was hers, and not so much as a lock of her beautiful dark hair, which stood out at the back of her head in a great knot high enough to reveal her neck in all its young charm, was disarranged.

"When are you going to dance with me?" said Verney, to whom her loveliness was revealed as if for the first time. "I've been waiting for a chance to ask you all the evening." He realized suddenly with what intensity he had been longing for the privilege he had thought to deny himself. "When may I have one?"

Harriet hesitated. She knew that was n't strictly true and that Verney had wilfully neglected her up to that moment, no matter what had changed his mind now, and she was n't sure she felt like forgiving him so easily as that. He had been very unkind.

"I hope soon," she said, looking at her fan.

Vandewater sensed the snub implied by her refusal to name any particular dance for the one she was to

The Politician

have with Verney, though it was ever so slight,— and smiled triumphantly.

“Not this one at any rate,” he asserted with deliberate swagger; “I’m dancing this one with Miss Rand.”

The red-veined eyes of incontinence and the clear high gaze of integrity met, and with the meeting a spark seemed to fly as if for proof of contact.

“You’re mistaken,” said Ellis; “this happens to be the very dance I had planned to have with Miss Rand.”

“I said it was mine,” returned the other, scowling dreadfully while the color began to creep up into his dark face.

“No, you’ve been fortunate enough to dance twice with her already,— that’s enough for you.”

“Miss Rand thought not,” replied Vandewater, still polite, though he trembled with rage; “she promised me this dance, too. Did you not?” He turned to Harriet as he spoke.

The bewildered and very much dismayed bone of contention cast the two young men a troubled, appealing look as they stood glaring at each other like two young game cocks picking a fight; that most ancient of all instincts in the male human being, the instinct to quarrel for the possession of a woman, fully aroused in them both.

“I think I won’t dance this dance at all,” she said at last; “it’s nearly over now (the music for the dance had indeed begun long ago), so I can’t very well give it away. Let’s just stay here and talk, it’s so much cooler!” and she smiled diplomatically over her fan

The World May End

first at one heated young man and then at the other. It has been recorded that she was a clever girl.

Nevertheless both cave-men were disappointed in her decision, for each had expected to triumph over the other — to crush, metaphorically speaking, the other's skull with his wooden club and bear the woman off as his prize,—and here was the woman herself, who was n't supposed to take part in the conflict, jumping in and settling the thing peaceable-like and calling it a draw. How uninteresting and civilized! Yet Verney, because his wit was superior to the other's, managed to lend to this unsatisfactory outcome of his and Vandewater's measuring of clubs, the appearance of victory for himself by turning to Harriet the minute she had made her impartial pronouncement on the subject, and asking her for the next dance, which Harriet without attempting to disguise her pleasure in the request, immediately accorded him. Whereupon Vandewater having sense enough to perceive that he had been out-generaled, bowed in acknowledgment of his rival's successful coup and left them, muttering something about a partner he had forgotten.

And then they began to dance, Ellis and Miss Rand. Lightly and gracefully he guided, gracefully and lightly she followed, and quick-beating hearts, shining eyes, and deepening color testified to their delight in their mutual accord. They did n't have to say anything, their nearness was enough. Through the glass doors of the ballroom blew in the sweet autumn air from the Jersey Hills, and a line or two from a favorite

The Politician

poem of his ran persistently in Verney's head as he danced, because, he supposed, of its appropriateness to his mood and to his feeling that in dancing with Harriet he was doing something he very much liked to do for the last time, and the very sweetness of the moment convinced him that it was for the last time.

"One more night am I deified; who knows but the world may end to-night?" it went repeating itself over and over in his brain. Yet, though he would never again so indulge himself, he was conscious that it was wrong to indulge himself at all. Where was his determination to fight his base temptation to pay any attention to this rich girl in the hope of extricating himself from his difficulties by means of her wealth? Where was the remorse he felt when it so nearly mastered him on another occasion? Something, some other power he was not acquainted with, seemed determined to make him play the part of a cad against his will. Else surely with every atom of right feeling within him protesting, with every dictate of conscience against it, he would not now be dancing with her.

Quite unconscious of the troubled thought that filled her partner's brain, Harriet, on the other hand, was thinking only as her step answered the entrancing call of the waltz music in perfect accord with his, and she felt the firm, delicate pressure of his arm about her, that a perfect moment had been given her; that in spite of his strange conduct earlier in the evening, her friend after all had wished to dance with her, and in that thought she was happy. What did it matter then what

The World May End

her feeling for him was called, whether love or friendship?

Mrs. Gibbs, as she watched them from a doorway, all unobserved by the oblivious pair, remembering what it was like to waltz with Verney, and that he had refused to dance with her that evening, clenched her hands in jealous rage, and hurriedly left the ballroom.

"One more night am I deified," sang Ellis's heart, as he danced with the keen joy of one who does consciously something he knows to be wrong just because he wants to do it; "who knows but the world may end to-night?"

CHAPTER XI

VERNEY TAKES THE VEIL

ALL the way down to New York on the train Verney reproached himself for dancing with Harriet when he had made up his mind not to do so. He had left the ballroom immediately after that one forbidden waltz with her, and with a hurried word about having to get back to town that night for explanation of his abrupt departure, had fled for the station and caught the last train down. As a matter of fact, however, he had intended to stay over Sunday with the rest of them; but with the ceasing of the music to which he and Miss Rand had been dancing, he was overwhelmed with remorse and shame to think that he had broken his resolution so easily; and in mortal fear that he was on the point of yielding again to the temptation of paying court to the heiress in earnest, he had prudently, like the warriors in Cæsar's Commentaries, "sought safety in flight."

For that day had made it clear to him that the nature of his temptation lay not alone in Harriet's millions, and that the necessity for giving up her society in the future was very real. First, by means of the accident at the horse-show and his own surprising mani-

Verney Takes the Veil

festation of emotion on that occasion, and second, by means of his little brush with Vandewater, which had proved to him that he was capable of feeling jealousy where she was concerned, he had discovered that it was by no means out of the question for him to fall in love with Miss Rand.

This possibility rendered the situation more difficult in his eyes because it made the danger of his eventually asking her to marry him much more serious, and he emphatically did not wish to marry. Of that he was as certain, now that he had come to his right mind in regard to that base idea of his that he would marry for money (which was in his opinion the sole practical reason for marrying at all), as that he did not wish to give up politics, and his belief that he could not do both was deep-rooted.

"You're a fine fellow, Verney," he said to himself in disgust, as he settled down in the smoking-car too absorbed in abusing himself for having failed so signally to stick by his principles, even to light a cigar. "What on earth are you about, anyway? What kind of blackguard are you? The sort that marries a rich girl and spends her money trying to see how high he can climb on the political ladder, and neglects her in the process? Answer, 'No.' Well, then, have n't you strength of mind enough to give up seeing her before things go any further? Well, I should hope so! Then stop dancing with her and talking with her and going to see her all the time! Stop behaving like a weak-

The Politician

mind ed child and make up your mind like a man, and when it 's made up, stick to it!"

But as he sat frowning in the stuffy car, his arms folded, his teeth catching his lower lip, he realized miserably, with an infinite self-pity, that he *had* made up his mind, that that was why he had left the dance, why he did not stay in the country with the rest, why he was sitting there in the almost empty car at that late hour, speeding back to New York, the only man in the whole world who was not privileged to stay and dance with Harriet.

He found his father up, when he reached the house in Twelfth Street and let himself in with his latchkey. Mr. Ellis was also alone, for Mrs. Ellis had gone out to Ardsley-on-the-Hudson to spend Sunday with one of her married daughters.

"Is that you, Vernor?" he enquired from the top of the stairs.

Verney said it was, and bounded upstairs three at a time.

"Anything the matter?" he asked anxiously. "Could n't you sleep?" His father was in bedroom gown and slippers.

"Oh, I've slept a little," replied the older man; "but I heard you come in and thought if we talked a little while it would do me good. I feel so restless, and I have a little pain."

"It's cold in here," said Verney, following him down the hall to a spacious bedroom at the back of the house which Mr. Ellis occupied now because it was so much

Verney Takes the Veil

quieter, and perceiving that the fire on the hearth had nearly burned out. "It's a cold night, if it is only September," he said, and laying aside his coat set himself to the task of coaxing up the fire. He had a big blaze in a minute. "How is that, sir?" he asked, springing up. "And now, where's the whiskey?"

Mr. Ellis smiled. "You know I don't take it any more, son. The doctors say it's bad for me." But he eyed the glasses and decanter Verney had taken from a little cupboard in the dressing-room, wistfully.

"Oh, damn the doctor!" said Ellis cheerfully. "A little won't hurt you; it's taking it all the while that hurts. Here's how!" And he handed his father one glass, touching its rim as he did so with his own.

Mr. Ellis hesitated.

"Pitch in!" commanded his son. "It will do you good. It's my opinion you gave it all up too suddenly, father. That's a good enough reason for making a man feel sick!"

His father smiled and did not gainsay him, but Verney feared, and he knew, that there was deeper and more serious cause for his ill health than that. Only a month or two ago the doctor had told the old man that while he might live many years, he would have to fight continually an organic disease which must in the end conquer him, since medical science had failed to discover a complete cure for it. But because he was a man of great character, of tender, loving heart and superb courage, Mr. Ellis had not permitted the doctor to tell his wife or children. As long as the disease per-

The Politician

mitted him, as it now did and would be likely to do until the very end, to go daily to his office and to keep his feet, he intended to preserve his secret. That his health was not good his family could not help being aware of; but the grief and anxiety which knowledge of the name of his destroyer would have brought them they should never have, he had resolved, if it was in his power to prevent it. In comparison to saving them that, the loneliness and sadness of keeping the knowledge to himself, of depriving himself of the sympathy of his loved ones, counted for nothing.

"Here's to celibacy, the most desirable of all states!" said Verney, filling his glass again and drinking it down with a kind of reckless gayety. "What! Not another?" to his father, as Mr. Ellis rejected his offer to fill his glass.

"No, my boy," said the older man; "one's enough. I took that only to oblige you."

Verney laughed. "Was it the toast you didn't like?" he said. "But I couldn't expect you to drink that. It would be like asking you to wish I were n't here. And of course I don't mean that! It's such a lot of fun to be here!" he added, with a laugh that didn't sound as if he quite meant what he said. "I don't know that I've ever thanked you enough for that."

His father looked quickly up at his son standing in his shirt sleeves, glass in one hand, decanter in the other, his face flushed, his eyes brilliant. He didn't know him so very well, he and Verney really saw so little of each other; he was in better touch, perhaps, with Clinton,

Verney Takes the Veil

his oldest son, who was a partner in the law firm of Ellis & Ellis; but he was exceedingly fond of Verney just the same, and secretly very proud of the boy's success in politics. He had a vague suspicion now that Verney for some reason was unhappy that evening; but the animation and vim with which his son went on to give him an account of the day's doings at the horse-show and the dance banished it at once.

"Then you had a good time?" he said satisfiedly.

"Wonderful!" replied Verney, "never had a better!"

Mr. Ellis leaned back in his chair and sighed contentedly. "And the Baby?" he said. "Did she have a good time too?"

"Best ever!" said Verney from the hearth-rug, where he was sitting cross-legged, and proceeded to give a glowing, highly colored account of Carol's popularity at the ball to her doting father, old Mr. Ellis nodding his head and smiling delightedly the while.

It was almost as good as having them with him, his wife and daughter, to hear about their good times. Now that the doctors had told him the nature of his illness, the greatest pleasure he had was to have them with him, except the thought that they were away enjoying themselves. His being lonely didn't count beside that. And that was the pathos, the injustice, of his keeping his secret to himself. If they had known, his wife and the daughter who was still at home, who loved him as dearly as he loved them, they would never have left him alone a moment.

"I wish Carol had come back with me; I wish mother

The Politician

were n't away too," said Verney, prompted by a sudden acute perception, inspired by his own wretchedness, of his father's feeling of loneliness.

"Oh, no! I'd much rather have Carol stay and have a good time; and as for your mother, she's been promising Winifred to go out there over Sunday for the last month or so," replied his father, smiling cheerfully. "And I'm not deserted, you know, when I have you. It's a long time since we had a talk."

Verney admitted with compunction that it was, and reaching up, put his hand over his father's where it lay on the arm of his chair.

"How's politics?" asked Mr. Ellis, with a pleased smile, knowing that no other subject of conversation was so dear to his son's heart.

Verney's face clouded.

"I've been thinking of giving up the leadership of my District," he said; "my financial affairs are in such an awful way, I'm afraid I can't afford to be leader any longer — it takes so much time from the office."

"My poor boy," said his father commiseratingly; "that's hard, I know, and I sympathize with you while I'm obliged to say that I think it's the only right thing for you to do."

"I expected you would feel that way about it," returned Verney. "You always have felt that way about my being in politics."

"And you know why — because I want to see you settled in life, enjoying an assured income, before I die. Not that I don't expect to be with you a long

Verney Takes the Veil

time yet," he added, hastily, as Verney looked up, "only it's natural, you know, for a father to feel that way. If you had children yourself you'd understand." Verney moved uneasily.

"You know I haven't any money to give you, Verney," Mr. Ellis continued. "I've met with great reverses this last year or so and have been unfortunate in getting rid of some of my property." He stopped and sighed.

"I know, sir," said the younger man, with feeling. "But don't let it worry you on my account."

"I don't want it to," said his father; "that's why I'm so urgent that you should give up politics and stick to the law. I'll always have enough to leave your mother and the Baby plenty when I die, and your other sisters are married. As for your brothers, why, they're well placed. Clinton will inherit the business of Ellis & Ellis, and Benjamin, though he's not rich, has at least a settled salary he can depend upon. So you see it's on my youngest son's account that I most regret that I have so little to leave my children when I die."

"Don't talk of dying," said his son, who would have taken his father's words more to heart if he had only known what the doctors had known a long time, and what Mr. Ellis knew now. "I tell you you needn't bother about me! I can take care of myself."

"You can if you will,—if you will stick to your practice. You've made a splendid start, you know, and you're a brilliant man, Vernor. I wish you would. There's no future in politics, believe me. No reward

The Politician

that is a just equivalent for the time spent in that sort of work, no money to be made out of it. At least by a man of honor, as I know my son is. Your leadership of the District, for instance, what practical substantial return has it ever offered you that pays you in actual cash — which you need in order to live properly — for devoting your time to it rather than to your law business? ”

“ I can’t give it up, though, father,” replied Verney, wilfully avoiding the issue and speaking in low, determined tones.

Mr. Ellis looked at the bowed head pityingly. “ It ’s hard, I know,— it ’s hard to ask it of you, especially when I know your ambitions are such disinterested ones ; when I know you ’re the kind of politician the country is n’t ashamed of and would delight to honor ; but I ’m your father and I have to have your material welfare at heart. To me that must come first.”

“ I ’d rather starve than back out now,— they need me ! ” said the young man passionately.

“ Pooh ! Pooh ! ” said Mr. Ellis, forcing himself to disregard that passion, not to look at the knuckles of his son’s clinched hands. “ Of course they do in a way, but they could easily enough find some one to fill your place ! There ’s nothing in the world so cruel, so callous, as the political machine. The wheels must go around, no matter whose blood oils them. The harder a man works, the harder he is worked. And that ’s my son all over. You would cheerfully work yourself to death in the interests of the Republican party

Verney Takes the Veil

and the party would cheerfully let you — but that's all the good it would do you. You know yourself how you slave over your District, yet what reward have you ever had? ”

“ I don't want any reward. I only don't want to leave them in the lurch.”

“ Nonsense. Just as if they could n't get some one else to do your work.”

“ I don't want any one else to do my work.”

Mr. Ellis gave it up. “ My poor boy,” he said, “ I wish I could persuade you. You have character enough to do it, I know. At least you were able to refuse that chance to be a judge you had last year.”

“ Yes,” said Verney harshly, “ I was. I did that for the sake of making money, because I knew I could make a few more miserable dollars at the law, and I refused to go back to Albany for the same contemptible reason. And that's enough! I won't give up the leadership! the work I love! Holding office does n't begin to compare, anyway, with the joy of working for one's District, of feeling yourself a part, no matter if it's only a little insignificant unit, of a great organization like the Republican party, and of seeing that your part is in good order, that the rivet you're responsible for is in place!” He rose in his agitation and walked the floor excitedly.

Mr. Ellis's eyes filled with tears. “ I'm sorry,” he said, “ not to appear to sympathize with you when you feel so strongly. Perhaps I'm not a very good father to you to advise you to give up what you care so much

The Politician

about, but that's the best advice I know how to give."

Verney was deeply moved, his father's tears stirred his filial tenderness to its depths.

"You are!" he cried, flinging himself down at his father's feet and putting his hand on his knee; "you're the very best father a boy could have! And if I — if I — ever have a son —" He hesitated and stopped.

"Yes?" said his father wonderingly.

"I'll try to be just the kind of father to him you've been to me," finished Verney courageously, though for all his courage he could n't quite keep the huskiness out of his voice.

His father patted his head. "Come, we must go to bed now," he said. "I feel much better for this little visit with you." And Verney saw with pleasure that Mr. Ellis's color was much better and his voice firmer.

The young man sprang to his feet. "Oh, do you sir?" he said. "Here, let me help you!" And he proceeded carefully and solemnly to assist Mr. Ellis to bed, fussing over him as if he had been a child. First the fire had to be fixed for the night, then a glass of water brought, then the light adjusted, Verney talking lightly and cheerfully all the time he was performing these services about the prospect he had of receiving the nomination for Attorney-general if Ordway were named for Governor. This bit of news pleased and comforted Mr. Ellis greatly. The salary was considerable, and it meant that his son would have

Verney Takes the Veil

a fixed sum to depend upon for four years at least, if he were elected.

"Well, if you *will* go in for that kind of life, I suppose an Attorney-generalship would make it really possible. And of course the office would help your general practice of law."

"It would make everything right for me," replied Verney. "The salary's about eight thousand a year, I believe, and with that amount assured, I don't think I'd have to give up my District after all, at least not for four years."

"Perhaps, but oh, my son! If I only had the money I once had it would be so different for you! You could climb as high as you like!"

"Oh, I'll get high enough! Don't you care, father. How's this light?"

"Just right, thank you. I think I shall sleep now," returned his father from the bed.

"Then good-night," said Verney.

"Good-night," said Mr. Ellis, and then, just as the young man was closing the door, "Oh, Verney!"

Verney in reply, hand on door-knob, patiently: "Yes, sir?"

Mr. Ellis, irrelevantly: "What was that toast you gave when we were having our whiskey?"

"What toast? Oh," with sudden recollection, "you mean 'to celibacy'?"

"Yes, what made you say that?"

"Oh, I don't know," with a forced laugh. "Only

The Politician

that I'm too busy to marry, I guess. You know I've always said that if I ever married I'd have to hire somebody to live with my wife!"

The old man smiled at this cynicism. Nevertheless his voice was earnest when he said: "But I don't like you to say that. You should marry, you know; it's only right and natural. I want you to have a home of your own and a wife and family, Verney, some day; and I hope you will."

Verney swallowed very hard. "I hope so, sir," he said, recognizing for the first time in its poignancy that he had cherished a hope of this kind subconsciously ever since he had become a grown man, and that without it he was going to be very lonely.

"Good-night, father," he said gently and without a trace of this feeling in his voice.

Outside in the dark hall he stood perfectly still while the hardship of the thing he had made up his mind to do slowly and clearly revealed itself to him. It had been difficult for him to grasp in the abstract the magnitude of the sacrifice he was contemplating in resigning his hope of married happiness, but now that Harriet Rand had provided him with a concrete example of what it might mean to give it up, understanding had come to him with the force of a blow. And with his enlightenment a kind of rage possessed him, a feeling that he was meant to be happy as well as successful, and that fate had no right to ask of him that he should choose between one and the other, and forbid that he should be both.

Verney Takes the Veil

"I won't stand it!" he said to himself in a spirit of revolt, and running rapidly downstairs. "I won't let it bother me any longer. Not to-day at least. I've had enough for one day! Let's see, it's only one o'clock. I'll get some men in and have an old-fashioned party!" He threw back his head, standing all alone in the lower hall and laughed; his eyes began to sparkle and a feverish color rose to his cheek bones.

He ran to the butler's room at the back of the house and beat on the door. "Wilson!" he called, "get up! There's going to be a party!" Hardly waiting for the man's sleepy "All right, sir," he tore to the telephone and called up a number of choice spirits, trusty night-owls that he knew he could count on finding alive and awake at that hour. Tommy Beekman he found, as he knew he should, at Brooke's playing bridge, Harold Alden at the Yale Club, and with Robin Hill, who lived next door, and three of the Scott brothers from Eighteenth Street, he had what he called a "full house."

None of them seemed at all surprised at Ellis's rather unusual summons. Verney was celebrating, was he? That was all right. Would they come and help? Watch them. And come they did, arriving by motor and on foot one after another, just as Verney and the faithful Wilson had finished setting out the things to drink and smoke which formed the leading features of the impromptu entertainment, a huge silver punch bowl figuring most prominently.

"Well, well! And well again," said Tommy Beek-

The Politician

man, who was the last to arrive. "What is little Verney up to now?"

"He's celebrating, he says," answered Carrington Scott, youngest of the three Scott brothers present, "but he won't tell us what about."

"Ah, Tommy!" said Ellis, "I've been waiting for you. Good man to come!" And he pushed the silver punch-bowl and several specimen ingredients for the mixture toward Beekman, who could mix a punch that the most expert denizen of the region behind the bar could not hope to emulate.

"Make a drink!" commanded Verney, leaning toward his friend and laughing; "make it sky-high and sky blue! Make it strong enough to kill care! Make it deep enough to drown sorrow! Make it as sweet as the kiss that hopeless fancy paints on lips that are for others! Make it as cool as Heaven, as hot as hell-fire! Make its blend the essence of flowers and so far from the taste of tears that grief shall be a stranger when we drink it! Make it—" He stopped, and the men around the table, who had been staring at him in fascinated admiration caught the infection of his riotous gayety, artificial though it was, and with one accord broke into applause.

"Go on," they entreated; "go on!"

"Make it,—" began Ellis again, then he sat down suddenly, smiling confidentially at Beekman. "Make it anything you like, Tommy, old boy," he said, "so long as you make enough of it!"

Verney Takes the Veil

Which, as a closing sentiment, was loudly approved by all.

The punch completed, Verney was on his feet again proposing a toast. "To celibacy, most desirable of all states!" he said.

The half-raised glasses of the other men came to a halt.

"Oh, come!" they said. "Can't you think of something more cheerful than that? For a toast?"

"No," said Verney; "it's my party, and every man must do as I say, so hurry up and drink it!"

His domineering eye won the day and his guests drank obediently. All, that is, except Larry Scott, the eldest of the six brothers, who was present and who happened to be engaged.

"I can't drink it," he protested; "I'm going to be married."

"Can't be helped," said Verney; "every one must drink it, so down you go!" He seized Scott by the shoulder and pinned him firmly to his chair.

"It is n't polite to your host not to. Besides, we did!" cried the others, and with firm hands forced that part of the obnoxious draught which did not seek Larry Scott's shirt front down his unwilling throat.

The party was on.

At three in the morning Verney's old nurse "Nanna" came downstairs and knocked at the dining-room door.

"Mr. Verney!" she called; "Mr. Verney!" But nobody heard her. The revellers on the other side of

The Politician

the door had by that time reached that most pleasing stage of their revel when everything they said was funny, when roars of laughter greeted every remark, even if it was only "You're another," or "Please pass the punch," and were too busy hurling these and similar witticisms at each other to notice the knock.

Nothing daunted, the old woman put her face down close to the crack of the door.

"O Mr. Verney!" she called; "do come to bed; it's three o'clock!"

Anxiety for his health, which she knew late hours and too much to drink invariably affected, was her only motive in interfering; not at all a wish to rebuke him. That kind of party was familiar to her, and she was too used to it to be shocked now. Ellis heard her this time and opened the door. His hair was slightly ruffled and his eyes bright like sapphires and his color high. Otherwise he presented his usual immaculate appearance and his speech though careful and plentifully interspersed with pauses, was clear.

"Evening, Nanna," he said; "come in and have something. Won't you?" He motioned toward the punch bowl.

"No, no!" she said hurriedly; "I don't want any. I want you to come to bed, my lamb. You'll kill yourself if you keep it up much longer."

"Sorry, Nanna," replied her lamb, "but I can't do it. I'm taking the veil, you know, and these good men," he waved grandiloquently toward his friends around the table, "are helping me take it."

Verney Takes the Veil

"Promise you'll come in an hour," said the old nurse, perceiving at once that he was n't to be moved, and backing out of the room.

"All right. In an hour, if I'm not dead then," he agreed, bowing very low with his hand on his heart, and adding as she closed the door, "*Ave! morituri te salutant.*"

But it was two hours before the party broke up. Verney's last conscious act when he finally reached his bed that night was to turn his face away so that he might not see the portrait of Abraham Lincoln, whose sorrowful eyes kept reproaching him from the wall. But he could not so easily escape his guilty conscience; for in turning he found the sardonic eyes of the Emperor Napoleon fixed upon him from the other wall, the left one winking at him with mortifying intelligence.

CHAPTER XII

THE STRUGGLE AT SARATOGA

AS a natural result of Verney's resolution to forswear every chance of furthering the friendship between himself and Harriet, she saw nothing at all of him for the next ten days or so. They were pleasant ones, in a sense, because they were spent in New York, her aunt having consented to occupy her friends the Chittendens' house for them while they took a two months' trip abroad, but she was much troubled by this sudden defection on the part of the Politician. She knew he had been very busy, for the State Convention that was to nominate the Republican candidate for Governor, not to mention the candidate for Attorney-general and other important offices, met in less than a week, on September 14; but she could n't quite see why he had n't time to run in for a minute or even to telephone! Especially when he knew how anxious she was to hear how things were going, and what his and Ordway's chances of nomination were.

The thing that made his conduct more inexplicable than ever was her remembrance of that dance they had together at the time of the horse-show. Surely, she thought, he was happy then as well as she; indeed it was her increased confidence in his friendship for her

The Struggle at Saratoga

dating from that dance, that had led her to anticipate more than usual proof of it from him upon her return to New York. Perhaps she had offended him unconsciously, and she spent much time in going over in her mind every detail of that evening's events in an effort to discover the cause, but without succeeding. Their parting was abrupt, it was true, but then that was his fault, and he said he had a train to catch. It was very strange; she could n't understand it a bit and spent so much time trying to fathom the mystery that she became very silent and developed a preoccupied, sober manner that at last attracted her aunt's attention, so that she asked her niece what was the matter. Worse than that to the girl was Mrs. Cumloch's accusation, when prolonged questioning did not serve to disclose the cause of Harriet's low spirits, that she was in love.

Harriet recovered her usual fire in a flash and denied it with scorn, especially when her aunt dared to name Verney Ellis as the supposed object of her affections.

"Can't a girl be friends with a man, be interested in his career when she has n't anything interesting to do herself, no object in life except to travel around, and spend money on herself, without every one thinking she's in love?" she demanded indignantly.

"Oh, it does n't matter what you call it!" her aunt replied shrewdly, and the implication brought a resentful color to Harriet's face. She spoke calmly, however, which did credit to her self-control, believing as she did that Mrs. Cumloch's charge was unfounded.

"Nevertheless, Aunt Lydia," she said, "you are mis-

The Politician

taken. Nothing is farther from my mind than being in love with any one."

This irritated Mrs. Cumloch, whose disappointment over Harriet's refusal of George Benton lay very near the surface.

"I know you think so," she said, "and until now I have seen for myself that it was true. You have never until just lately showed any signs that your heart was capable of being touched, and that in spite of the fact that you have had one of the most estimable young men I know,"—this bitterly—"in love with you."

"And what signs do I show now?" asked Harriet, more curiously than defiantly; she was aware of her aunt's pet grievance and made allowances for it.

The older woman stared at her a moment as if trying to decide on the best definition of her meaning to give her niece. "You're more human," she said slowly; and then more positively, "yes, that's it, more human."

The girl laughed. "I don't think I know exactly what you mean, Aunt Lydia," she said.

"It's difficult to explain, but I think that where you previously put too much emphasis on the things in life that have to do with the mind and the soul, and too little on the things that have to do with the affections, you now are finding out that it's a fine thing to have a heart, after all."

"But how do I show it, this humanizing process?" inquired Harriet, as interested in what her aunt was saying as if it were said about some one she did not know, instead of about herself.

The Struggle at Saratoga

"By your anxiety to do things for people, for one thing. I've always known you were naturally kind and impulsive, but I think you've repressed it heretofore, and now you're discovering that we need more love in the world than education or religion, and that the truest expression of love is service."

"Do you mean that I've been ungenerous until now, that I didn't do things for people?" Her eyes were very wide and almost dismayed.

"No, no! my dear, not at all!" her aunt hastened to say, gathering her into a fond embrace; "only that previously you did things for people more with your money — by paying other people to do things for them, and now you do things with your hands, yourself. Your donations to charity are very large and as generous as they can be, but you've never felt the necessity of giving your time to the poor as well, and I believe you would now."

"But supposing it's so, what does that prove?" said the girl.

"It proves to me that your outlook upon life has changed. It used to be that of a child, and now it's a woman's. And I've always known, Harriet, as long as I've known you, that it would take just that — your falling in love — to develop you, to make a woman of you."

"Perhaps; but you mustn't forget that I deny that I am in love," said Harriet, but quite sweetly, the harmony usual between aunt and niece having been restored by that embrace.

The Politician

Mrs. Cumloch rose and went to the desk in the room in Mrs. Chittenden's house that she was occupying. "Then why do you cover every scrap of paper in the house with these?" she asked, with a kind of mischievous triumph, and put in her niece's hand something she had taken from the desk. It was a half-sheet of note paper closely filled with very well executed profile and full-face sketches in pen and ink of a young man with hair brushed straight back from a lofty forehead, level eyebrows, high cheek bones, and a wonderfully well-cut mouth, under which was written "The Politician."

Harriet blushed as she looked and made no reply. It is n't in either author or artist to deny his own work.

Miss Rand's only comfort during this trying period of absolute silence on the part of Verney Ellis was Mr. Vernor, who had been very kind and polite about occasionally taking Mrs. Cumloch and her niece to the theatre, and had formed the habit of calling at the house in Forty-ninth Street. It was on his way to his own apartment farther up town, and he often stopped on his way home from the office to see if he could do anything for his charming friends from Chicago. He was an interesting man, Richmond Vernor, wonderfully well informed, and better than that, endowed with an amusing way of imparting his information to others; and he soon came to be a great favorite with Mrs. Cumloch. As for Harriet, she could have loved him for one thing alone, because he brought her news of the Politician.

The Struggle at Saratoga

Mr. Vernor, who was not lacking in astuteness, had perceived this, and made a point of telling her everything he could about his nephew and his affairs. He perceived also, and that not without wonder, for he greatly admired Miss Rand and had had every reason heretofore for believing that Verney did too, that her eagerness to hear news of the young man was caused by his continued non-appearance in Forty-ninth Street. The fact that Verney was unusually occupied at this time did not altogether explain matters to him any more than it did to Harriet; for he knew that nothing was ever too much for Ellis to accomplish, and that he would have come if he had wished to come, no matter what his other engagements. Impelled by his failure to analyze the situation for himself, he had ventured to interrogate Verney on the subject.

"Why don't you call on Miss Rand any more? You used to see so much of her," he said, "and she's here for such a short time."

"She's going to be in New York several weeks yet," his nephew replied in noncommittal tones, "and lately I have been very busy."

This was a good reason in a way for his neglect, but Mr. Vernor was assured it was not the true one.

"She's a very beautiful girl and a very charming one," he remarked tentatively.

"I know it," was the somewhat discouragingly short answer.

"And what's more," continued the self-appointed

The Politician

inquisitor, undismayed, "if I'm not mistaken, she's very fond of you."

Verney was on guard at once. He was afraid his uncle was going to talk to him about his "responsibility" just as Mrs. Gibbs had done, and it was going to bore him to death as well as irritate him, because he did not believe a word of it. So far he had only considered the possibility of his falling in love with Harriet, and that problem had been sufficiently complicated to prevent him from thinking of the possibility of her falling in love with him, even if his persistent refusal to admit the existence of such a possibility had permitted him to do so.

"You're mistaken, Uncle Ritchie," he said, in measured, positive tones, "except as a friend she does n't think anything of me one way or another."

Mr. Vernor said nothing to this, but got up and walked about the table once or twice. They were dining together in his apartment.

"Let me tell you something," he said, gently, sitting down at last. "Do you know, I have a theory—I've had it a long time—that when a woman's in love it is made manifest by a sort of halo about her head, which constitutes the phenomenon of love."

"Hum," said the younger man.

"And that the composition of this halo is the same as the light that shines in her eyes, that shines and shines with a radiance that I'm sure can be reflected only from the Throne. And it's visible only to people who are in love themselves."

The Struggle at Saratoga

"Well?" said Verney. It irritated him to have to admit it, but somehow his uncle's theory interested him.

"I think Harriet Rand has that halo about her head," said Mr. Vernor thoughtfully.

"Why do you think so?"

The older man looked carefully at the cigarette he was rolling; it was an operation he was fond of and in which he was expert, and he waited until he had finished sealing the white lip of the little square of tobacco-filled paper before he spoke. "I've seen it."

"But I thought you said only those who—" began Verney.

"I know," returned the other, "only those who are in love themselves. Well?"

Verney was bewildered for a minute. He didn't know of any girl with whom his uncle could be in love. Then it dawned on him. It was Harriet Rand herself his uncle meant! Intimate as their relations were, the young man felt abashed by this astounding confession.

"Nothing," he said, in reply to his uncle's query.

Richmond Vernor looked at him quickly. "Don't think I mean the halo is for me, however," he said; "it is n't," sadly—"that I know well."

"For whom is it, then?" something impelled Verney to ask in very low tones.

"For you," replied his uncle simply.

Ellis had been expecting, had been fearing, the other was going to say that, but now that it was said he found that he felt unaccountably moved and touched.

The Politician

Yet he still felt just as sure that it was n't true — that Mr. Vernor was mistaken. It was only a sentimental fancy of his uncle's induced by his own sentiment for Harriet. He felt assured that he need not take the matter seriously or attach any significance to the halo idea. No, it was only a conspiracy on the part of Mrs. Gibbs, his uncle, and the whole world, to try and make a conceited ass of him.

"That's a very interesting theory of yours, Uncle Ritch," he said decidedly, "but forgive me if I say I think it's only a theory, and that as far as you've applied it to me, it's absolutely erroneous. Why, I know, I happen to know that Miss Rand thinks more of my work, of my being in politics, than she does of me. She's a very intelligent girl, and she's interested in a subject that grows in interest with every year — political reform. It's my ambitions in that direction that attract her, not I. A man would be an egotistical fool to believe anything else, no matter who said so, if he'd had as little reason for believing it as I've had!"

As he spoke, his confidence came back to him in a flood-tide, and he recognized with relief that this was so, and that the other aspect of the affair was the wrong one. Fortunately; for he realized too that if there had been any truth in what Mr. Vernor had said, the situation would have been rendered hopeless, where now it was only difficult. His resolution to see as little of Harriet as he could had only been strengthened by this talk with the older man, and the twelfth of Sep-

The Struggle at Saratoga

tember came and found him at Saratoga, without Harriet's having heard a word from him.

He had left New York the night before on the midnight train, to attend the Republican State Convention at Saratoga with Rupert Mathers, leader of the New York County delegation. They were going a little ahead of the other delegates as there was work to be done in cementing the anti-Downes feeling of a number of doubtful counties; and there were people up-State known to Verney Ellis and not to the chairman for whose conversion Mathers relied upon his lieutenant.

A test vote had been taken on the preceding Tuesday at the primary elections — no wonder Verney had been busy the week before, the burden of the work in connection with that event having fallen upon his shoulders — to see whether the majority of enrolled Republicans really favored Downes's reelection or not. The conclusion was favorable to Verney's plans for his friend, as it had been discovered that the majority were against the renomination of the present Governor. The touch-and-go nature of the situation was best demonstrated by the universally expressed opinion of political leaders that the contest would be determined by the way in which New York County went, that county having a hundred and eighty-seven delegates in the State Convention of about one thousand.

Verney in his room at the United States Hotel felt more than satisfied with the situation. The up-State counties he had been in doubt of were pledged to stand against Downes to the last; and the name of Oliver

The Politician

Ordway as a possible candidate was heard more and more frequently. He had his friend's assurance, too, that he would not withdraw his name no matter what the outcome was; that as his own county and several others had already been instructed for him, he would not consider it fair to do so. The Politician felt that this gave him *carte blanche* to go ahead and do all that was in him to increase his friend's following; and the thought made him feel so confident and sure of success that he forgot all about his good resolutions and sat down and wrote Harriet all about it, explaining minutely his former fears, his present hopes, and the reasons he had for thinking the latter were going to be realized. Not one word did he say, however, of apology or explanation in regard to the recent hiatus that had occurred in their friendship, and he dismissed his own prospects for the Attorney-generalship with a line at the end to the effect that they were about as likely to offer him the nomination for that office as to make him "President of Cuba"; so that Harriet, reading the letter in her room in the Chittendens' house, though thrilled to see the name of "The United States Hotel" on the envelope as evidence that her letter was from the scene of battle, was not at all satisfied with its contents.

The opening of the Convention on September 14, found two-thirds of it against the Governor and it was admitted by both factions, for and against him, that there were more than enough delegates to prevent his nomination if they could be united for any one else.

The Struggle at Saratoga

The reasons which the Republican leaders had for opposing Downes were substantially the same as those which Verney Ellis had given Harriet on the occasion of Mrs. Cumloch's dinner at Lake Forest at the close of the National Convention, and were briefly — his recommendations for a direct nominating primary election law, and for the public service commissions laws — and his refusal to consider a political endorsement as valuable for an appointment to office. There was more resentment against the latter policy than either of the others perhaps, because more than anything else, it struck a blow at the existence of the Republican organization in New York; their belief in the necessity of which was a religion with its members. Then, too, the leaders were all honestly and sincerely of the opinion that the Governor's renomination would mean defeat for the Republican ticket. As the chairman of the Republican State Committee had said the day before as he stood on the veranda of the United States Hotel talking to a large group of up-State delegates: "If Downes is renominated it will mean the greatest slump at the election the Republican party of the State has ever experienced."

Inability to select the right man to unite their votes upon as opposing candidate for the nomination was the chief stumbling-block in the way of the political leaders. Several good men had been suggested who were considered to stand high enough in the people's estimation to capture the popular vote when it came to the election,

The Politician

and who were all likely to carry the Republican ticket to success, and among them Verney's friend Ordway; but somehow or other for this reason or that, the leaders had been unable definitely to decide on any one of them.

That was the situation when the Convention opened, and it was not materially changed on the second day; therefore, perceiving that the time was growing short and that something must be done quickly, a conference of the leaders representing both the Downes and the anti-Downes factions met early that morning to see how matters could be brought in short order to a satisfactory conclusion. It adjourned after protracted discussion, the only result having been a decision to meet again, and a more or less friendly agreement that in the interval the nomination should be offered to a man regarded, at least by those opposed to Downes, as meeting the needs of the case. When the day's session, which had begun at two o'clock, had been concluded without any nominations having been made, its only feature of importance the speech of a member of the Cabinet who was chosen temporary and permanent chairman, the conference met again. Those present at the meeting, over which the chairman of the State Committee presided, included the member of the cabinet, ex-Governor Orme of New York, National Committeeman Fairchild, Senator Gray from Syracuse, Representative Thomas J. Beekman of Albany, friend and devoted ally of Verney's, Speaker Oliver Ordway himself, and his faithful lieutenant, James Vernor Ellis.

At this conference the efforts of those opposed to



"Anyone rather than the present Governor"

The Struggle at Saratoga

the Governor to find a suitable candidate for the nomination came to a head, and much pressure was brought to bear upon the member of the cabinet to accept it. Great hopes had been built on this plan, but the cabinet member "knocked them all into a cocked hat" by refusing. His reason, he explained, was that if he accepted, as senior member of the cabinet he could justly be accused of disloyalty to the President, who was well-known to be backing Downes; and having delivered his ultimatum on the subject, in company with most of the men who were friendly to the Governor he left the conference for his hotel and went to bed. This was at two in the morning, and the opposition, who had banked everything on his acceptance of the nomination, gave way to despair at the summary departure, and there was some talk of withdrawing their objections to Downes and of supporting him.

It was at this moment so opportune for his plans, that Vernor Ellis who had been biding his time, rose and called the attention of the conference to Speaker Oliver Ordway, who was, he said, in every way qualified for the nomination. With force and some eloquence he dilated upon his friend's ability, already proved in the office he then held, upon the neutral character of such a choice, and lastly upon the urgent necessity of deciding upon someone at once. With tireless energy he elaborated the numberless reasons why they should nominate almost any one rather than the present Governor again, and his fellow politicians listened.

Downes was an enemy of organization in the first

The Politician

place, Verney reminded them, without which no permanent good could be achieved; he believed also in one-man power, which could be only temporarily efficacious. Every one admitted, and Verney was convinced of it himself, that political organization, like labor unions, was in need of reform, that both were illustrations of the great abuse of a great use, that both had been conceived and instituted to attain right results, and that both had been corrupted. But, he asked, was that any reason why either should be abolished? No. When a good thing had become bad you reformed it — you did n't abolish it. But Mr. Downes did n't think so, he thought it should be destroyed. Would they let Mr. Downes be nominated, then? Just for lack of the will power to agree upon some one else? He hoped he knew them better than that. Surely they thought as he did, that one of the most important things to be aimed at in reforming politics was to lessen the expenditure of money. Did they mean to nominate a Governor who advocated direct primaries, which besides being themselves a serious obstacle to party organization, necessitated the expenditure of more money than was spent in any other political operation. If they doubted this statement they had only to look up the records of the contest for the senatorship in a certain Western State in which a very wealthy man named Peterson had defeated a man named Matthewson. Verney said he did n't know if they knew it, but it was a fact — he had good authority for the statement —

The Struggle at Saratoga

that nine hundred thousand dollars had been spent at that primary contest, and that Peterson had openly stated in advance that he was ready to spend five hundred thousand dollars more to be declared at the primaries the choice for United States Senator. And in New Jersey, too, where the direct primary system was in operation, a great deal of money had been spent.

Could they endorse an administration that approved of a system so bad in its effects, Verney wanted to know. Were they not aware, too, that by the direct nomination system a nomination might be made by a minority, which could not happen in a convention where the choice was always that of the majority of delegates?

Having thus rapidly reviewed some of the reasons for not supporting Downes in any event, which in his estimation were of the greatest importance, Verney went on to score the Governor on his own account. One thing in particular he had never been able to forgive him, and he dwelt at length upon it. It was an act of injustice and bad judgment which provided this young politician with no end of capital in urging the leaders present to offer the nomination to Speaker Ordway.

When one of them, Senator Gray, although they were all on the point of assenting to Verney's proposition, suggested — perhaps by way of proving that he had no greater objection to Ordway — that the Speaker might be too young a man to fill the office of Governor of the State of New York, Verney, who had paused

The Politician

a moment to take breath and to catch his lip with his teeth, leaped to meet the objection like a hound from leash.

What had the young Turks done for their country by way of securing good government, he would like to know? Was n't it their determination to have justice, their armed interference, that had won a charter for Turkey? It was the day of young men, and Downes had had four years of power; why was n't it fair to give another and a younger man a chance?

Perhaps it was their desperation, perhaps it was the appeal to their prejudices and their principles which Ellis's speech had made, or perhaps a feeling of relief on the part of the older leaders that the honor should be given to a man like young Ordway of neutral position as to the contending factions, who was not of equal prominence or directly in competition with them, that won the day. Perhaps it was all these reasons combined with the fact that they were quite wearied out and ready to snatch at any reasonable suggestion made by any one. At any rate, the result was that Ellis's earnest advocacy of his friend as Republican candidate for Governor met with unanimous approval; and when the members of the conference who had stayed to the end adjourned toward four o'clock in the morning, it was with the intention of nominating Speaker Ordway on the morrow.

But not one of the tired men who sought their rooms in the hotel where most of them put up, was as tired or as happy as Ellis. His success in getting his fel-

The Struggle at Saratoga

low politicians to unite upon Ordway as the right man to oppose Downes was happiness enough; but as it happened, the last thing the conference had done was to name him for Attorney-general at the same time. It was not altogether unexpected, but highly gratifying just the same, that they should have done so, and he thought with a glow how pleased his father would be. And Harriet,—yes, she would be pleased too.

Physically exhausted, but with an absolutely tranquil mind, he composed himself to rest that night; and not even the uneasy mutterings of a callow delegate from up-State who slept next door and whose inability to sleep quietly had somewhat disturbed Verney the night before, or the fact that the daylight had begun to come in at the windows, could keep him from dreamless slumber. He was not fated to sleep long, however, for at seven in the morning a boy knocked on his door with a telegram. It was from his mother, saying that his old nurse Nanna was very ill with pneumonia, and that she was asking for him.

CHAPTER XIII

“FRIENDS, HOW GOES THE FIGHT?”

ELLIS was very much troubled by this news. He supposed his mother had sent the telegram hoping that he would return to New York at once, but he did n't see how he could do it. Only a woman who understood nothing at all about politics and who did not sympathize with her son's interest in that direction could ask it of him. And yet he would have liked to go. It was hard that old Nanna should be so ill and he not there; especially when she was calling for him! That he could n't bear to think of! How kind the dear old woman had always been to him, how good! And always he had been her favorite, that he knew. 'Way back when he was a little bit of a boy he could remember how she had fended for him, quarrelling with the nurses in charge of the other children to get her child his rights. And even now that he was grown up, how well she looked after him, what loving care she took of his clothes, how particular she was to see that he had something to eat when he came home late at night too tired and too busy to have thought of dinner!

It was very pitiful, and Verney — breakfast quite forgotten — walked sadly toward the telegraph office.

“How Goes the Fight?”

Nothing except the present crisis, this convention at Saratoga, could have kept him from going to his old nurse's bedside; but as it was, he felt he could not leave, not with his friend's fate hanging in the balance on the very morning of the nominating day. After working so hard he could n't leave his task undone,—it would be betraying his friend's interests.

“They need me here,” he telegraphed his mother; “I must stay. Keep me informed how she is.”

It was an exciting day, that final one of the Republican State Convention. Armed with their overnight determination to present Speaker Ordway's name as their candidate for Governor, the leaders opposed to Downes felt that the battle would be fierce, and the result close. Indeed the profoundest uncertainty as to the outcome of the contest prevailed; and while strong anti-Downes men were heard declaring that it looked to them as if the opposition to the Governor's nomination were disintegrating and that they should n't wonder if he won on the first ballot, the most loyal of the Governor's friends expressed their doubt that he would win at all with practically two-thirds of the Convention against him. Verney Ellis, however, with the chairman of the State Committee, Rupert Mathers, of New York County, and Thomas J. Beekman, of Albany, formed a solid nucleus of anti-Downes men whose confidence that the Governor would be defeated had never wavered.

“He can't get the necessary 506 votes to nominate him,” said Beekman, who was as ardent a champion

The Politician

of Ordway and as earnest an enemy of Downes as Verney, as he and Ellis took their seats in the Convention hall.

“Now that the fight has been carried into the Convention,” returned Verney, “we will surely win.”

The plan of the leaders opposed to the Governor was to have the names of a number of candidates placed in nomination before the Convention with the idea that these men would get enough votes to prevent Downes from being nominated on the first ballot, and then to offer the name of Speaker Oliver Ordway as candidate.

This programme they carried successfully through. The atmosphere had been decidedly tense, for news of the selection of an opposing candidate by the faction not in sympathy with Downes had leaked out, when the chairman, who was also a member of the cabinet, entered the hall to open the Convention; but it was relieved immediately by the burst of cheering lasting two minutes which greeted his appearance.

The business of the day was then speedily despatched, the temporary organization made permanent, the report of the credentials committee submitted and adopted, the platform reported and read. Whereupon, the nominating having begun, the leaders of the Republican organization rose in their might and hurled the names of half a dozen candidates for Governor before the Convention. The well calculated effect of which manœuvre was to scatter the votes of 505 of the delegates out of the 1010, which left exactly that number, 505 votes, at Downes's disposal effectually pre-

“How Goes the Fight?”

venting his nomination on the initial ballot by rendering the vote a tie. Following which a second ballot was entered upon, when the chairman of the State Committee who was also Lieutenant-governor and an ardent anti-Downes man, appeared upon the platform and nominated Speaker Ordway. Three-fourths of the packed audience responded with applause; whereupon Beekman, who was president of the Albany County Committee, stepped out on the platform and seconded the nomination.

A demonstration of disapproval arose at this moment from the galleries where groups of Downes sympathizers were seated. Beekman rebuked it harshly. “There seems to be doubt in some quarters whether this is a Republican Convention,” he said, “but it is. Have you forgotten that in supporting the present Governor you are advocating a man who considers himself too big for his party, too big for the party that elected him in the first place?” He was a short, stocky, young man, Beekman, without much presence, but the strength of his convictions, the sincerity of his beliefs, served him for presence and eloquence alike and made him for the moment a great orator. After a sensible and telling argument to prove Ordway’s eligibility for the office of Governor, he went on to give a brief but earnest exposition of what he called the present Governor’s inadequacy, characterizing him as a narrow and egotistical, though able man.

But the part of his speech that won the most delegates to his cause was what he said in regard to the

The Politician

interference of the President in the question of the candidacy for the Governorship of New York. Another fiat had gone forth from the White House only that morning by means of telegrams to the effect that Downes must be declared by the Convention to be the Republican candidate for Governor.

“Will you be dictated to, my friends — free-thinking, independent representatives of counties that belong to the most important State in this independent country — by an autocrat, by the first emperor in the White House?” he asked with passionate intensity.

And whether justifiably made or not, that appeal to the feeling most characteristic of our nation, the spirit of liberty, of resentment of coercion,—was not lacking in effect and with results that were unfavorable to the Downes faction. Delegates responded to Beekman’s call for more supporters of the Ordway movement from every side, and the chairman of Albany County, as he stepped down from the platform, felt that the battle was as good as won and that he had done yeoman’s service to the cause.

Verney Ellis, listening appreciatively, felt that he had indeed. The Politician had not at all envied his friend the opportunity to make the speech, or wished to figure so prominently in the Convention as Beekman had; he was only glad his friend had done the work so well. Having set with his own hand the wheels in motion which were to accomplish his heart’s desire, having slaved untiringly to insure the success of his plans, he was content to leave the completion of the work, the

“How Goes the Fight?”

finishing-off of the ends to others, provided that they were competent. So long as Ordway won he was satisfied, whether or not he had himself a conspicuous place on the programme of events that had brought it about. As he had once told Harriet, he was one of the practical politicians who helped other men to run for office rather than the kind whose sole aim was to run for office himself.

There was a chance of course that he would be nominated for Attorney-general, but the possibility was one he had not in any sense sought; and exciting and pleasing as it was, he had quite lost sight of it in the greater issues of the day. It was with no feeling of envy, therefore, but with the frankest sort of pleasure that he welcomed Beekman back to his seat, congratulating him upon saying the right thing at the right time; and little Tommy Beekman, who thought the world of Verney and admired him tremendously, smiled delightedly at the other's praise.

A messenger boy walking slowly down between the rows of seats, stopping at intervals to call: “Tel’gram for Mr. Ellis! Tel’gram for Mr. Ellis!” interrupted the conference of the two young men. Verney claimed the yellow envelope when the boy's attention had been attracted, and opening it found that it was a “come-at-once” summons of the familiar type, this time from his sister Carol, stating that Nanna was much worse.

In despair he handed the despatch to Tommy and rapidly outlined the situation. “She's dying, you

The Politician

know, and she has been so devoted to me. I owe her so much, it seems inhuman not to go."

"It's an awfully tough position to be in," sympathized his friend, "but I don't see how you can go just now."

"I can't," acknowledged Verney, mournfully, "not until I find out whether Ordway gets the nomination or not. I've seen him through so far, I must see it out," and he handed the waiting boy a hastily scribbled message saying that he was coming as soon as the Convention was over and would probably reach New York late that night.

When the placing of names in nomination had been concluded, the secretary boomed out the call for the first county in the roll,—Albany. Beekman, who had been waiting for this moment with the impatience of the pardoned criminal for the day of liberty, as chairman of the county called, literally hurled himself from his seat and cast the 28 votes in his delegation for Ordway. A burst of applause followed that had grown in volume since that occasioned by the first mention of the young Speaker's name.

There was little excitement after that until Kings County was called, the intervening counties having divided their allegiance about evenly between the Governor and Ordway. The Lieutenant-governor, who was chairman of that county committee, rose smiling, as if he were thoroughly enjoying himself.

"Kings casts 138 votes for Ordway," he shouted,

“How Goes the Fight?”

and Ordway's popularity having increased steadily, a tumult of cheers responded.

And so the battle went; first a county for one, and then a county for another; or perhaps a county for Ordway would contain a District or two for Downes, and *vice versa*. So even were the two candidates, the others having been lost sight of early in the race, that by the time the “N's” were reached, neither had the advantage of the other. Then New York County was called. It was an intensely exciting moment, and people held their breaths, delegates and spectators alike; for this was the deciding county, its vote would determine the contest.

Verney, who was alone now, for Beekman had left him to sit with a group of political leaders on the other side of the crowded hall, bent his head and prayed, for he didn't feel quite certain what New York was going to do. He knew that Mathers, the chairman, was favorable to the Ordway movement; but New York was a large county to handle.

Mathers, a tall, thoughtful-looking, light-haired, young man with a high, bald forehead, rose calmly from his chair. “The second district of New York County casts ten votes for Governor Downes; the remaining 177 votes for Oliver Ordway,” he announced in a firm voice.

This made certain Ordway's nomination, and instantly, although the end of the balloting showed the contest to have been close with only 551 votes for

The Politician

Ordway and 416 for Downes with 43 scattering, the 5,000 persons crowded into the Convention hall, touched off the only big noise in the whole proceedings, save perhaps the demonstration given the cabinet member earlier that day.

Verney waited only until the nomination had been made unanimous, the motion to make it so having been made by a former Downes man, before he left the Convention. The remaining events of the afternoon, the nominations for the minor offices such as Attorney-general, he learned afterwards. There was a four o'clock train to New York which he wanted to catch; but before leaving the hall he went around to where Ordway sat, to congratulate him.

"I've you to thank, Verney!" said the young Speaker gratefully, his dark face pale from the strain of the past hours, but happy, and his dark prophet's eyes luminous with visions of the good he was going to do, the great things he was going to accomplish in his new position of power.

However, he did not attempt to express to his friend any of his feeling of exaltation. He knew Verney was feeling the same way — as much so as if the chance to fill so directly their splendid dreams for the making of new political history that should be clean and pure and free from corruption were his own, instead of his friend's. A pressure of the hand was all that was needed to cover the situation completely between these two young men who understood each other, and Verney was soon explaining to the newly made

“How Goes the Fight?”

candidate for Governor why he could n't stay until the end of the Convention.

“How about the Attorney-generalship?” said Ordway, immediately. “Can't you stay and see how that goes, whether you get the nomination?”

“No, I can't, Oliver,” returned Verney, “I must get that four o'clock train. Poor old Nanna may be dying, you know.”

“Of course,” said the other, sympathetically. “Well, good-bye, good luck!”

Verney was out of the building and was looking at his watch to see if he would have time to go to his hotel for his bag before making his train, when little Tommy Beekman came running out after him.

“Ordway's won!” he shouted, “We've won! Oh, damn it, Verney, but I'm glad!” His face was wreathed in smiles, his voice suspiciously near to tears, and Verney, forgetting his train and his trouble for the moment, rushed to meet his friend, whom he had not seen since Ordway's nomination had been assured. Tommy and he had worked shoulder to shoulder in the cause, and now that success had attended their efforts, they felt the need of rejoicing together.

“Is n't it fine, Tommy? I swear to the Lord I never was so happy about anything in my life!” he said, and Beekman for answer in a paroxysm of joy flung both arms around Verney's neck and swung clear off the ground. He was quite short, and Ellis just under six feet.

“But the nomination for Attorney-general, are n't

The Politician

you going to stay until that's decided?" asked Tommy when they were both calmer, "aren't you going back to New York with the rest of us, and help celebrate?"

"I can't," said Verney, impatiently; suddenly recalled to the pressing nature of the reason that made this delightful plan impossible.

He looked at his watch, and with a hasty, "Bye, Thomas!" was off in the direction of his hotel at a dead run. Reaching it, he literally hurled the amount of his bill at the astonished desk clerk, and snatching his bag jumped into a hack and tore down to the station, which was not far away, arriving just in time to bundle on the four o'clock express for New York before it pulled out.

In a pleasant back room of Mrs. Ellis's residence in Twelfth Street an old woman lay very ill, so ill, indeed, that the family doctor — nothing was considered too good for old Nanna in that household — had given her only a few more hours to live. Deprived by death in her early years of husband and little son, she was quite alone in the world and had no relative or friend to come and sit by her dying bed. She belonged to that most unselfish class of women who spend their lives in mothering other people's children, only to be forgotten as a rule by the child they cared for and the parents to whom they have rendered this inestimable service, when their time of usefulness is past. This was not true, however, in the case of Verney's old nurse, who, long after the children had grown up, had

“How Goes the Fight?”

continued to live with the Ellises, beloved and respected by everybody in the house.

This had been arranged to please Verney, who, as a little boy when he was first taken from his nurse's charge and sent to school, petitioned that Nanna never be allowed to go away; but as time went on Mrs. Ellis found it a practical arrangement as well, as the old woman up to her last illness was active and able and was always finding some new way to make herself useful. Her chief care, nevertheless, continued to be for Verney, whom she had never been able to consider grown up; and the other servants in the house soon realized, and invariably warned newcomers that this was the case; that in regard to any neglect of “Mr. Verney's” interests old Nanna had to be reckoned with.

He was her child, her more than son, her idol, her very all; and now that she felt her end was close upon her, the one thing she asked of life was to see once more the beloved face, to hear again the familiar young voice asking “Where's Nanna?” the minute he was in the house. She could go weeks without seeing him, content with tidying his room, mending his clothes, making some little trifle for him to wear—she was an accomplished knitter,—but the day that brought her a glimpse of him was a red-letter day for her, and when he was pleased to laugh and joke with her, as he often did when he had a minute to spare, no girl receiving her first compliment could have been more pleased.

“Is he coming?” she asked for the hundredth time

The Politician

from the bed where she lay exhausted and wasted by her short fierce struggle with the dread disease from which she was suffering and which she realized was on the point of being victorious. "Surely he must be coming now, Miss Carol?" She had been asking that question all that day and the preceding one in her delirium, and now that her head had become clear, late that afternoon, she was asking it still.

This interval of reason, however, far from being a good sign, the doctor had told the watchers by the bed was a sure precursor of death.

"No, Nanna, not yet!" poor Carol who was sitting beside the bed, her nose red, her eyes swollen — all the family were devoted to Nanna — had been forced to reply; and she went to the window to see if a cab were turning up the block.

"I wish the young man could be hurried," said the trained nurse from the other side of the bed, a typically calm, unimaginative young person in white linen, with the air common to her kind, of expecting to get at once anything she might ask for, "this anxiety is bad for the patient."

The old woman in the bed spoke again, but this time less plaintively and what was more pathetic, with confidence.

"I know he'll come," she said, "when he knows his old Nanna is going to leave him! Verney! Verney! Nanna wants you, dear!"

The young girl in the window rose softly and left the room that the "patient" might not see her tears.

“How Goes the Fight?”

“Oh, why does n’t he come?” she said to her mother outside on the landing (Mrs. Ellis had come to enquire how the sufferer was); “it’s the cruellest thing I ever heard of, to keep her calling for him like that just for the sake of his old politics! If he does n’t come in time — if Nanna dies —” she broke down altogether and sobbed aloud.

The doctor, who had not long been gone, hurried by them at this moment and entered the room, and through the opened door they heard the old woman singing “Lead, Kindly Light.” Nanna had been well educated and a devoted church-goer.

“The night is dark, and I am far from home!” came the weak voice of the dying woman in the room, reinforced by the stronger one of Miss Hallie, the nurse. With the last verse, however, —

“And with the morn those angel faces smile
Which I have loved long since, and lost a while,”

sung brokenly and with touching expression, Miss Hallie joined the group in the hall, an unwonted emotion in her cold young face.

“She’s getting delirious again,” she told them, resolutely applying her handkerchief to her eyes.

Mrs. Ellis entered the room, and on hearing the door open Nanna raised herself suddenly in her bed. “I knew you’d come!” she said, “My baby! My little Verney!”

But the light of reason was no longer in her eyes. It was ten o’clock that evening before Ellis reached

The Politician

New York. He had telegraphed from the train when he expected to arrive, but no one came to meet him as he had hoped, to give him the news, and he ran up the steps of his home with foreboding in his heart.

His sister Carol, who had been watching for him, opened the door.

"Is she — is she — ? —" began Verney, his charmingly enunciative voice broken and breathless with haste and anxiety.

"She died an hour ago, calling for you," replied Carol, who was yet too unreconciled to his tardy arrival to wish to spare him anything.

His Uncle Richmond, who had gone down to the train after all to break the news of his old nurse's death to Verney, but had in some way missed him at the station, came in at this moment. He had been at his sister's all the afternoon and evening, feeling that his presence was a comfort to her and to Carol in this sad crisis, and had felt the pathos of the dead woman's situation not a little; but at sight of his nephew he could not suppress his eagerness to hear how the day had gone for him at Saratoga.

News of the Governor's defeat and Ordway's nomination had already appeared in the papers, but not the nominations for the minor offices which had been made later.

"Well, friend, how goes the fight?" he said.

"She's dead," replied the Politician, who stood in the hall with bent head. "I got here too late. I hurried all I knew, but it was too late."

“How Goes the Fight?”

“I meant the outcome of the Convention, dear boy,” said his uncle gently placing a kind hand on the drooping shoulders, “did you get the nomination for Attorney-general?”

“I don’t know,” said Verney.

“Here’s a telegram for you,” said Carol, picking one up from the hat-rack, “it came just before you did, and I forgot about it until now.”

“You open it, Uncle Ritchie,” said Ellis to Mr. Vernor, turning away his head as he spoke. He was sick of telegrams.

The older man obeyed, and reading it, a smile lit up his face and he handed it triumphantly to his nephew.

It was from Ordway, announcing Verney’s nomination as Republican candidate for Attorney-general.

CHAPTER XIV

RIVALS

THE first news that Harriet had of Verney's nomination was when she read it in the papers at the breakfast table the next morning. With pulse and heart-beats a trifle accelerated she eagerly scanned the list of nominations made in the convention.

"For Governor," she read, "Oliver Ordway,"

"For Lieutenant-governor, Morris Gray,"

"For Secretary of State, Samuel S. Kerning,"

"For Attorney-general, James Vernor Ellis,"

and read no further.

But though she was unable to keep from rejoicing that this good fortune had befallen Verney, she could not on the other hand help wishing she had learned the news from him. He might so easily have telegraphed. She felt certain, however, that he would call, that whatever reason he imagined he had had for ignoring her heretofore would be forgotten in this important crisis, and that he would come at once to receive her congratulations. Expecting him momentarily then, when he did appear — which was not for three days — her enthusiasm had vanished and the warmth had departed from her welcome. His tardiness in sharing his good news with her hurt her more than anything

Rivals

he had yet done. She was convinced by it that his dependence upon her for sympathy in his political hopes and ambitions had been a mockery, his confiding his plans to her nothing more flattering than the whim of a moment. She had his utter disregard of her at this important moment of his career as proof of his insincerity.

Verney meanwhile had been making a hard struggle against his inclination to do just what Harriet expected him to do — call and tell her all about it. Tired from his three days of mental and physical activity at the Convention, worn out from the strain he had been under there and the sleep he had lost, and melancholy and dispirited as a consequence of his old nurse's death and the pathetic circumstances under which she had died, for which he felt more or less to blame, the only thing Verney felt he really wanted to do was to go and see Harriet. No wonder, then, that his recent determination to give up his friendship with her, celebrated with so much pomp on the occasion of the ceremony of taking the veil, wavered, and that the third day of temptation found it abandoned and Ellis on his way to Forty-ninth Street. From which it is to be judged that Verney was no better at keeping good resolutions than any one else, although to do him justice, he would have kept this one if he had thought for a moment that it had anything to do with any one but himself. But he did n't. He thought, on the contrary, that his conviction that a man in his circumstances should not marry, and the resolution to put love out of his life

The Politician

which he had made on the strength of it, was his affair alone, affected him only, and that he was less guilty in breaking that resolution than if it had affected any one else.

As he swung off the Madison Avenue car at Fortyninth Street and walked east toward the house Mrs. Cumloch was now occupying, he found himself happier than he had been for some time, and it was with a warm sense of pleasure to come that he felt in his pocket for the small white campaign button, printed in black with the legend "For Governor, Oliver Ordway" which he had saved as a souvenir from the State Convention to give to Miss Rand.

His pleasant anticipations were dispelled however when he found that Harriet had already four callers that Sunday afternoon. He was terribly disappointed; he had not dreamed that she would not be alone; and then, Harriet herself was not any too delighted to see him, was in fact horribly cold and distant. With a forced manner quite different from his usual friendly, pleasant one he spoke to the other men in the room, Gerald Merrick, his Uncle Richmond, Robin Hill, and Billy Vandewater. The stress and strain of the last few days had been too real, had pulled him down too much, to admit of a better simulation of an enthusiasm he did not feel.

"Hail the conquering hero!" said Billy Vandewater, banteringly as the newcomer found a seat on the outer rim of the circle about Harriet, and Verney, who had forgotten it for the moment in his general feel-

Rivals

ing of weariness and depression, remembered quickly that he hated Billy Vandewater.

A chorus of congratulation and question followed, more or less sincere — for Verney was a favorite — but was construed by its perverse object as perfunctory and dismissed by him as briefly as possible. Harriet, he noticed with bitterness, had been markedly behind the others in congratulating him upon his nomination, and had hardly done anything except fiddle with the tea things since he had made his appearance. He began to wish he had n't come. Why should she fail him now, just when he was most in need of sympathy? What had he done to displease her? Had n't he the best reason in the world for keeping away from her and was n't he here at the cost of breaking his resolution? Had n't he written her a letter from Saratoga? What more did she want? But in thus justifying himself to himself he had overlooked the highly important fact that Harriet was ignorant of the nature of his "best reason in the world for keeping away," utterly in the dark as to his motives for behaving as he had done.

Absorbed in these unprofitable reflections, it took him some time to notice that he was being left entirely out of the conversation and that Harriet was leading it with a brilliancy and light-heartedness, not to say ability for ignoring him, that amazed Verney, accustomed as he was to the first claim upon her attention. Yet Harriet was not showing a petty resentment in her indifference to his presence. He was too obsessed by his

The Politician

own side of the question, too occupied with his work to realize it, but he had nevertheless given her just cause for feeling hurt; and one letter from Saratoga quite devoid as it was of apology or explanation of his inexplicable change of attitude toward her, had not sufficed to banish that feeling. With all the will in the world she found she could not feel the same toward him: and try as she would, her efforts to talk to him as naturally as of old were failures. And Verney, appreciating this, fell a prey to the deepest gloom and in the most approved Death's-Head-at-the-Feast style, sat silent with folded arms in the midst of the laughter and talk.

"Are n't you going to have anything to eat?" Harriet said at last when his silence had lasted a long while, with a fair imitation of her old sweet smile, her black eyes glooming at him from behind the tea-urn.

He started as if awakened from a bad dream, and looking up quickly, saw that his uncle and the other two men had gone and that only Billy Vandewater was left besides himself. The realization gave him new life and energy, and he made up his mind in a flash to sit the other out and have Harriet all to himself, when he hoped they might come to a better understanding. For he saw that he had hurt her, and whether he understood how he had done so or not, it troubled him.

He drew up his chair nearer to the girl's. "Yes, indeed I am," he replied, "everything you have. I'm hungry!" He smiled brilliantly and the color rose in his pale face.

Harriet, who had observed his pallor and despondent

Rivals

air with secret concern, for all she had felt so unable to show it, was greatly cheered by this return of his old spirits and almost made up her mind to forgive his recent unkindness then and there.

"Those soft chocolatey things are the best," she said, taking a plate from the table and offering it to the young man.

Vandewater thought it time for him to "come in."

Making an excuse of his failure to reach the Sheffield tray with his empty cup from where he sat, he moved his chair up on the other side of Harriet's, a trifle nearer perhaps than Verney had moved his.

"How 's politics?" he asked, thinking it advisable to address Ellis in friendly fashion, at least as a starter.

"Fine, thanks," returned Ellis pleasantly. "How 's leading cotillions?"

Verney's reference was satirical, as the accomplishment was the one ostensible occupation Vandewater was known to have in life. Although he had been admitted to the bar he did not practise, for a fortune inherited directly afterwards had placed him beyond the need of doing so.

"Have some more tea, Mr. Vandewater?" interposed Harriet hastily, scenting the battle afar off.

" "There is n't any more," said Alice," volunteered Verney quoting glibly from Lewis Carroll, and he tipped the tea-pot as he spoke to prove the truth of his words.

"I'll get it filled," Harriet said laughing, his manner was so absurd; "just ring that bell over there will you, Verney?"

"Don't trouble, Miss Rand, I did n't want any more,"

The Politician

Vandewater said stiffly, at last able to swallow the resentment which Verney's remark had aroused, and which the discovery that he and Harriet called each other by their first names had not tended to appease.

Harriet did not, however, entirely restore Verney to her good graces that afternoon. She tried to, but the hurt was too deep to make such a rapid healing anything but superficial. Something was evidently very much amiss, seriously wrong.

Verney observed with concern that she was natural with him only by fits and starts and that she seemed much more at ease with Vandewater, turning to him more frequently and seeming more anxious to hear what he had to say on the various subjects of conversation that were brought up. A horrible feeling that he was making a mistake in supposing that she would want to talk to him alone came over him, as he saw how gladly and how often she appealed to the other man, and he began to think she would prefer to have Vandewater the last caller to take his leave. She might even be in love with the fellow, for all he knew! There had been plenty of time for that phenomenon to have occurred, his exaggerated state of apprehension told him, during the two weeks in which he had seen nothing of her himself; and which the rich and idle Mr. Vandewater had probably put to good advantage.

The thought almost compelled him to take his departure at once, but his reluctance, which by this time seemed inborn in him, to leave the other man victor of any field upon which they had both entered, kept him

Rivals

where he was. If it had been any other than Billy Vandewater, if other people had been there, he would not have hesitated; but the bare idea of seeming to retire beaten under the eyes of this extremely distasteful person made his gorge rise and glued him to his chair. He would sit Vandewater out at any cost. Unfortunately for the success of this plan Miss Rand's other caller had hit upon the same scheme, had made up his mind about the same time to sit his rival out; and as with him a determination amounted to obstinacy, it seemed quite likely the call would never terminate, and that the three would sit there all night.

It was the girl herself who finally put an end to the situation. Rising with the sweetest kind of dignity, she gave each young man in turn her hand in token of dismissal and explained very gently but decidedly that she was very sorry she could n't ask them to dinner but she was dining out herself and it was time to dress. She was sure they did n't know how late it was.

Verney was the first to reach the street. Mortified that he had allowed his feeling of antagonism for Vandewater to lead him into showing a lack of consideration for Harriet, convinced that he had displeased her by his conduct that afternoon, and half angry with her as well for having rebuked them — for though accomplished with exquisite tact the dismissal had been in the nature of a rebuke — this unreasonable young man with the boyish quickness of temper came at once to the conclusion that it would be a matter of necessity as well as expediency on his part to forgo her society in the future.

The Politician

"Here," he said, stopping a small boy of the street urchin variety who was sauntering by, "don't you want a souvenir from the Saratoga convention?" He fished out the white tin button from his pocket as he spoke with "For Governor, Oliver Ordway," on it which he had been too disgusted with the result of his call to offer to Harriet.

"Sure," said the small boy who made it a rule to take anything that was offered him and who always wanted everything, halting expectantly.

He showed more enthusiasm, however, and less matter-of-fact acquiescence when he actually saw what it was the "swell" wanted to give him, and as Verney explained its significance his eyes snapped with delight. Here was a trophy indeed to display before the other "kids," a campaign button from the scene of battle with the name of the victorious Republican candidate for Governor on it!

"Dontcher want it yourself?" he asked, gazing amazedly up into the young man's face as Verney pinned it carefully on the ragged lapel of his little jacket.

"No," said the Politician, "not any more. I was going to give it to my girl, but she's gone back on me!"

He had hardly released the boy whose impatience to go and "show the other kids" had made the process of pinning on a lengthy one, when Vandewater caught up with him.

"Going my way?" asked Verney, casual but polite.

"No, I'm not," said the other, "I just wanted a match, if you have one."

Rivals

"Certainly," said Verney, offering a box of safeties.

"Thanks," said Vandewater lighting his cigarette carefully and returning the box. Then, just as he turned away, "Oh, by the by, Ellis, perhaps you'll be interested in something I've just decided to do?"

"Perhaps," returned Verney lightly, pausing to hear what the other had to say.

"I'm going to run for Attorney-general on the Democratic ticket," said Vandewater.

CHAPTER XV

THE ONE THING A WOMAN MUST NOT SAY

ALMOST a month had passed since the open-air horse-show, but the beautiful Mrs. Gibbs had not as yet forgotten that on the occasion of the club dance in the evening Verney Ellis had not danced with her and had danced with Miss Rand. The very recollection of their utter absorption in each other as they danced, and their indifference to her presence as she watched them from the door, made her wince and writhe and set her hazel eyes to sparkling. For the plain truth and the ugly truth was that the beautiful Mrs. Gibbs was jealous of the young heiress from the West. She would not have admitted it herself, however, but would have characterized her feeling as a perfectly just resentment of Harriet's apparent appropriation of her property, and during the weeks that followed the dance where such a marked instance of that appropriation had taken place, she thought of nothing but how she might weaken the girl's influence—turn Verney's mind from all thought of her. Interference was really necessary; if something was n't done in a hurry, she almost feared he might marry Miss Rand! And then what would become of his career? and incidentally—though this reason Mrs. Gibbs was careful to keep in the background

A Woman Must Not Say

of her mind,— what was to become of her little flirtation with the young man?

The bare idea of such a traitorous act on Verney's part as getting married set his self-appointed guardian and supposed friend to plotting to see what spoke could be applied to this threatening wheel. It should be applied with a skilful hand, of course, and if possible was to be the smallest, most microscopic of spokes — a mere hint or suggestion — but applied it must be. Of that she was convinced. Did any one have the right to deprive her of the thing that most amused and interested her in life, her friendship with Verney Ellis? She thought not.

The first thing to be done toward accomplishing her purpose was to get hold of the young man himself, but for some reason this seemed very difficult to do. Except for a brief word at a dinner-party one evening she had not had speech with him since the day of the horse-show. She had written him her prettiest notes proposing luncheon down town and quiet dinners with "Willie away," and had telephoned him till she was ashamed to do it again, but Verney had declined all invitations to go and chatter with his charming friend. He was "busy" he said, in answer to them all, invariably that and nothing more.

And this was only the truth. He *was* busy. Vandewater with all the money he wanted to back him, and some friends with political influence, had had no difficulty in getting himself nominated for Attorney-general at the Democratic Convention, held not many days after

The Politician

the one at Saratoga. The campaign for Governor, with the other offices included in the Republican and Democratic tickets, had been begun with a rush, for it was late in starting that year like the national campaign and had to be a short one; and with his friend Ordway's interests to work for as well as his own, Verney felt he had his hands too full for idling.

Chance favored Mrs. Gibbs, however, when everything else had failed, and returning from down-town one morning in her brougham, she saw the graceful, erect form of the Politician walking down the avenue. In a second she had signalled her coachman to draw in to the curb and Verney, halted by a violently waved handkerchief, perceived that he was run to earth. With his sweetest smile, therefore, in token of surrender he stepped into the carriage beside her.

"Let's go somewhere for luncheon!" said the fair pirate of the high avenue.

"Anywhere, everywhere, I will follow on!" replied Verney in hymnal paraphrase. Having been fairly caught, he was resolved to be an amiable prisoner, and then he never attempted to deny that he was fond of Cora Keator Gibbs and of talking to her, or rather of listening to her talk.

"Sherry's," said Mrs. Gibbs to the coachman.

Verney glanced covertly at his watch. He had a pressing engagement at the Republican headquarters at two o'clock, for having devoted himself conscientiously to his law business all that morning he felt at liberty to do a little work on the campaign. It was then twelve

A Woman Must Not Say

— just time enough to lunch with a woman. Though it often took more than two hours he had never been able to do it in less. With Cora Gibbs, fortunately, he could reduce the time to its minimum. That was the advantage of knowing her so well. They were early enough to get a table in the corner and by the window, the two essentials to thorough enjoyment of a luncheon *tête-à-tête*, and Verney sat down with a feeling that it was n't half bad to eat in Christian fashion again. He generally had a sandwich and something to drink in the middle of the day, or if more than usually pressed for time, only something to drink, and sometimes neither.

Perhaps it was a good thing, after all, to have leisure forced upon you if you did n't ever feel like taking it yourself.

"Let's have melons first," he said; "you can't have them much later than September."

"Yes," agreed Mrs. Gibbs, raising her veil and removing her gloves.

"And let me see,— how would a frightened egg do after that?"

She laughed. "I don't know what that is," she said.

"Yes, you do. The way they cook eggs here—" He looked at the waiter for assistance, who said he knew what the gentleman meant and would bring it.

"You don't seem to think this is my luncheon!" Mrs. Gibbs reminded him, when they had finished ordering and the waiter had departed.

"I don't," said Verney smiling, "because you know and I know that it's mine and under no circumstances

The Politician

could it be yours!" He might have added with truth: "Also that you can afford to pay the ten dollars it's going to cost, and I can't," if the truth on such matters were ever spoken.

"Why did n't you come and let me congratulate you on your nomination?" she asked him, leaning both elbows on the table, and looking at him a little reproachfully.

"I could not find the time, Cora. I swear to the Lord I could n't!" he assured her earnestly; "I've been too awfully rushed."

"I know and I understand," she replied soothingly. It was n't her plan to scold him; she wanted him to be in the best of humors when it came time to hurl her bolt. "I would n't have wanted you to come if it meant slighting your work, you know that."

"I do," he said gratefully; "you always understand everything. I don't have to be forever thinking what I'm saying and doing for fear of offending you, as I have to with most women."

"Careful, Verney, careful!" she admonished playfully. "You'll have to do lots better than that if we are to remain friends,—only friends!" Her laugh rang, but her eyes were tender.

"Why? I don't have to feel 'responsible' when I'm with you, do I? You're not going to apply your preposterous theory to us, are you?"

She saw that she had taken the wrong tack and reassured him hastily. "I should think you didn't!

A Woman Must Not Say

What! with your sister Cora? Years and years older than you?"

It was Verney's cue to deny, and he always took it with enthusiasm.

"Younger, you mean," he said. "I give you my word, I never saw anything younger than you are to-day!" he gazed appreciatively at her brilliant color, her dazzling hair, and sparkling eyes, which formed such bright contrast to her severely plain suit of dark blue.

"There you go again," she remonstrated, "but it's no use; I have a stiff neck — caught cold in it yesterday — and my head won't turn!"

"Can't I say nice things, then, when I think them?"

"All you want, on the contrary," she replied with emphasis. "I've an ostrich's digestion for nice things!"

The time went very pleasantly for Verney, and Mrs. Gibbs, with whom it was a conviction that to make a man laugh was to render him half won and to make him think he could make her laugh was to render him all hers, had kept him so charmed first with her and then with himself, that he was very nearly in a good enough humor, she thought, to be approached on the subject of his folly in paying serious attention to Harriet Rand.

"Have you heard Stevie Cass's latest?" she asked, as they began their fruit salad.

"No; what's the bright boy been saying now?" asked Verney, smiling in anticipation of something good. Cass was quite the professional wag.

The Politician

"It was apropos of Roberta Caldee's breaking her engagement to Nate Bronson because she discovered he'd been engaged before," Mrs. Gibbs began with relish. "It's awfully sacrilegious, but Stevie said,"—she interrupted herself to laugh—"that the first commandment according to Roberta, was 'Thou shalt have no other girls before me!'"

Verney nodded approvingly. "That's one of his best," he said.

"You've heard it before! You know it!" accused Cora.

"No, I know Stevie!" Ellis replied.

"And he told you himself?"

"Yes, I saw him last night. He never likes to have his friends miss his good things, you know."

"Poor Stevie! He ought to be in a better business than making jokes! He has too little money to spend to be idle."

"Especially when he has so many girls! Never saw such a fellow for girls! If he sends flowers to them all, it must break him!"

"He does, but it does n't break him, because he sends all the bills to his father! But tell me, Verney, speaking of girls, have n't you a new one yourself? Billy Vandewater was saying only the other day that you were seriously interested in your friend from Chicago!"

"We have talked about that before," said Verney, with deep displeasure. The quotation from Vandewater and the expression "your friend" were equally distasteful to him.

A Woman Must Not Say

Mrs. Gibbs saw that her approach-shot, so to speak, had not landed on the green, and she dropped her light tone immediately and spoke pleadingly, leaning toward him with earnest eyes.

"Don't be cross," she said. "I don't want to talk about it because I want to pry into your affairs or gossip, but only because I'm interested in you, and I don't want you to do anything I should consider foolish without trying to stop you!"

"And what would you consider foolish?" he asked, somewhat softened by her apparent sincerity and anxiety for his welfare.

"Marrying," she said.

Verney looked out of the window. "I told you what I was going to do about that the other week. I told you I did n't intend to marry, and why."

"Yes, you did, and I approved of your resolution. But what I'm afraid of is, that if you really permit yourself to fall in love, you'll break your resolution. It's easy enough to stick to it while there's no temptation to face, but —"

"But when there is, you think I won't be able to withstand it? You have n't a very high opinion of my will power!" he interrupted.

"It is n't that, only I can't help feeling anxious."

"Why? What is it to you?" He was beginning to wonder that she should show quite such concern.

"Oh, Verney! I should be so disappointed, so sorry! I could n't bear to see you give up your career, your ambitions, at your age."

The Politician

"I think it would be a pity myself, if I did."

"Such a pity! And I'm awfully afraid you're going to do it! I've some very good intuitions where my friends are concerned, and I seem to feel, I seem to feel—" her tone was that of a seer—"that you're on the point of committing yourself to Miss Rand!" She did feel that way, but it was her jealousy, not her intuition, that told her so. If she had only understood the situation a little better, if her clairvoyance had only been able to inform her of the true state of the case, that far from being on the point of committing himself to Miss Rand, Verney had only lately taken a positive resolution never even to call upon her again—how much trouble the beautiful Mrs. Gibbs would have saved herself! "And I'm so proud of you, Verney, you know!" she went on, murmuringly. "I hate to see you throw yourself away so young. No man with so brilliant a prospect before him as you have"—the emphasis on the "you" was most flattering, and Ellis was not insensible to it—"can afford to tie himself up in that way. Not until he's *years* older!"

"I agree with you perfectly," said the young man. "There's no doubt in the world in my mind that marriage now would interfere with my work. Unless, of course I were such a brute as not to let it interfere!" He paused. "So you see it looks as if I would have to remain a bachelor."

"Because you're not a brute?"

"Just that. So you see you're worrying yourself unnecessarily."

A Woman Must Not Say

“Oh, do you think so?” she cried gladly. “Can you really assure me of that? I’m so pleased, so relieved!” Then rapidly, impulsively, “I’ve planned such great things for you, you know. I expect you to go so far! Quite as far as the White House!” She smiled very engagingly at him.

He smiled too. The White House was not an ambition of his, but he felt she said it to prove her devotion to him and her faith in his success, and did not gainsay her.

“Pretty nearly time to go,” he said. “I know it’s rude to look at my watch like this, but that’s what you get for lunching with a man with political engagements to keep.”

But Mrs. Gibbs did not rise. She was not ready to go yet, she had one more question to ask the young man. She had not heard Verney deny his devotion to Harriet Rand quite as explicitly as she wished him to. The general statement that he was not going to marry did not altogether satisfy her hunger to hear that he was, as he had always been, or as she thought he had always been — hers and hers only.

“You are n’t interested in her, then? Billy Vandewater was mistaken?” she said — the knowledge that she was doing a foolish thing, that she was in danger of losing all the effect of her previous diplomacy by this bald, point-blank question, lending a peculiarly breathless quality to her voice.

Verney looked at her in some surprise. “I did n’t say that,” he asserted; “I could n’t, because I happen

The Politician

to think a great deal of Miss Rand, if that's whom you are talking about."

"You mean you're in love with her?" asked Mrs. Gibbs, carried on to her fate by a resistless tide of jealousy that swept away every other consideration whether of propriety or diplomacy. Her insatiable curiosity to know the worst rendered her indifferent to the risk she ran that Verney would discover her true motive for advising him against marriage, that it had been her own selfish desire to retain her hold upon him, and not solely an interest in his welfare. And this in spite of the fact that she knew, as a woman of her intelligence could not help knowing, that such a discovery on his part would be as mortal a blow to their friendship as his marriage could possibly be.

"You mean you're in love with her?" she repeated while Verney hesitated.

"I hardly know," he said. He was certain he was not in love with Harriet, but he was not certain he was n't very near it. At any rate he did not propose to discuss the pros and cons of the matter with Cora Gibbs.

"That means you are! Oh, Verney! Verney!" wailed Cora Gibbs, concluding the worst from this non-committal statement; and then with a masterly effort to regain her impersonal interested-friend manner, "I'm so disappointed! What will become of your career?"

Her persistent interference in his affairs angered Verney.

"What's Miss Rand got to do with my career?" he asked fiercely. "I would be obliged if you would leave

A Woman Must Not Say

her out of the discussion. Besides," he added less sternly, "as I've told you before, I don't intend to marry, so what difference does it make whether I'm in love or not?"

But that was just where Mrs. Gibbs disagreed with him. She thought it made all the difference in the world, so much, indeed, that if he was in love — and she had about made up her mind by this time that he was — she was convinced, as she had confessed to him she was, that no amount of resolutions by themselves would serve to keep him from marrying.

There was only one recourse at her command that she could think of with which to try to avert this terrible catastrophe. If tears and entreaties and a confession of her feeling for him could keep Verney single he should not be lost for want of them. In her determination not to be beaten, not to allow the young man to escape from under her influence, she did not recognize this as the argument of despair and the same disastrous policy which her cooler common sense had rejected a moment ago. Truly she was being carried on to her fate by a resistless tide. She cast a glance in the mirror as they left the room and saw with satisfaction that she was looking her very best, for her very best as she knew well, would be a compelling factor in the success of her next move.

"Get in and let me drop you where you want to go," said she, as her brougham drew up at the curb outside.

Verney hesitated. He had begun to feel that he was being coerced; from what motive he did n't quite

The Politician

gather, but the feeling was a definite one. It was also likely to be fatal to Mrs. Gibbs's plan, since there is nothing so unmanageable as a young man who begins to get the idea that he is being "managed." But in spite of this apprehension Ellis decided to accept Mrs. Gibbs's offer after all. The probabilities were that she had not meant to be domineering or anything more than friendly, in taking such an interest in his affairs, and anyway he was late for his appointment.

"Thanks," he said, getting in after her.

"Verney," Mrs. Gibbs said solemnly when they had gone a few blocks in the direction Verney had wished to go, which fortunately for her schemes, led through quiet and deserted streets. "Do you really know why I was so anxious for fear you were going to marry that girl?"

"Yes," he replied, looking at her in astonishment and not liking the "that girl" at all, "you thought it would be an unwise thing to do if I were going to succeed in politics, was n't that it?"

"No," she said softly, and he realized suddenly how near she was; "I was anxious only on my own account, not yours, because I did n't want to have our friendship broken up, because I did n't want to lose you, because I'm fond of you myself!

"Don't go and get married, Verney dear," she hurried on before he could interrupt. "Don't go and spoil everything. We've had such good times together, and we can have so many more if only you will be sensible and not tie yourself down to a hearthstone! And I can

A Woman Must Not Say

help you, advise you in the difficult path to success you've cut out for yourself, ever so much better than any little fool of a girl who knows nothing at all. You know I can!" Her flushed face and pleading, shining eyes lent her an almost supernatural loveliness.

"Ah, Verney, Verney!" she cried in answer to his look of utter amazement and incredulity, "don't you understand? It's just that I can't give you up, I can't let you belong to any one else! I can't, indeed, I can't!"

He felt her arms go about his neck and a soft, exquisite cheek pressed against his chin.

"If you do," she murmured in his ear, "if you do go and marry some one else and never come to see me any more"—with a half-hysterical sob—"I shall die!"

It was a rude shock to the Politician. Until now he had relied upon the clever and beautiful Mrs. Gibbs for common sense before everything else, had taken for granted that she understood as well as he did himself the irresponsible nature of the affair between them, especially as it was founded upon a lifelong intimacy.

Yet here she was hysterical in his arms like any ordinary woman, reiterating the astonishing confession that she was in love with him—that is, if his stunned faculties permitted him correctly to grasp the situation. It was incredible to the point of being ridiculous, and he could hardly recognize unemotional, calm, brilliant Cora Gibbs, his friend and comrade of so many evenings, pleasantly spiced with flirtation as they had been—his admiration for whom he had never made any attempt to

The Politician

hide — in this sobbing, demoralized creature that clasped his neck so wildly.

Very gently but decidedly he removed her clinging fingers, forcing her to sit upright. "I'm sorry, Cora," he said gravely. "I had n't the least idea of this — that you felt that way." And by the very tone of his voice she saw that it was all over, that her trump card had met with disastrous and overwhelming defeat.

In the shock of this rebuff as they sat and stared at each other she realized that she had made a mistake and an irretrievable one, that she had said the one thing a woman who has not been asked to say it must never say to a man, if she does n't want to lose him at once and forever. She had told him, or intimated at least, that she cared for him, and far from binding him more firmly to her, the intelligence had put an end to the intimacy as summarily as a scissors severs a taut string. It was n't true, of course; she did n't really love him in the sense that she wished to marry him, for she was married already and happened to love her husband; but her vanity had not been able to suffer the thought that another woman should deprive her of this young man's society, upon which she depended for most of the amusement she got out of life, and had compelled her to try to keep him hers at any cost. But in telling him as a means to this end that she loved him, she had overreached herself; for having said it, she could not go back on it — a confession of love being the one thing a woman cannot retract.

Furious with herself for her folly in getting into this

A Woman Must Not Say

false position, furious with him for being the cause of her discomfiture, poor Cora pressed a button that signalled her coachman, and the carriage stopped.

"This is where you wanted to get out, is n't it?" she said coldly enough, though the fury of a woman scorned smouldered in her eye, and she jerked open the door.

The tone of Verney's reply was emphatic and decided.

"I think it is," he said.

CHAPTER XVI

LIGHT

HARRIET'S hurt feeling that Verney had not behaved at all kindly toward her in not coming to see her immediately upon his return from Saratoga had endured several days after that Sunday when he and Vandewater distinguished themselves by trying to sit each other out. It was swallowed up, however, in a flood of sympathy and concern one afternoon during a talk with Mr. Vernor, when she learned from him that Ellis's affairs were in bad shape financially and that his chance of making a successful run for Attorney-general was a small one if more money were not forthcoming. It looked, Mr. Vernor said, as if his nephew would not be able to meet the ordinary legitimate expenses of the campaign.

Vandewater, on the other hand, was spending money right and left with a free hand at the dictation of the Democratic politicians who had his interests in charge, and the result was beginning to show itself in the rapid development of a large and powerful constituency in his support. While the opposing candidate — Verney — was practically running his own campaign, Vandewater was entirely in the hands of his political friends, who

Light

for this reason and that, chiefly self-interested ones, had promised to get him the office for which he was running. Having nothing whatever to say about the conduct of the campaign, the young millionaire's only responsibility was to make a speech whenever his sponsors saw fit, and he was therefore free from the anxiety and worry to which Verney, as his own sponsor, was subjected. And Vandewater had proved himself not at all bad at making a speech. He talked easily, and seemed to have the trick of amusing his audiences, and greatest of all, he had a cast-iron nerve that no *contretemps*, however disturbing, could shake. Verney was finding him a hard man to beat.

And this state of affairs had so troubled Mr. Vernor, whose nephew's success was as dear to him as his own, that he was unable to forbear speaking of it to Harriet, and he poured the whole story of Verney's inability to compete with Vandewater's millions, and the sixteen-thousand-dollar handicap of debt under which he was laboring, into her sympathizing ears.

Harriet was shocked to hear it. It was difficult for her to believe that any one could be in such desperate case for the lack of so commonplace a thing as money. She had had it to spend all her life, and she found it hard to imagine what it would be like not to have it. Mr. Vernor's picture of Verney's straits made her realize it for the first time, and the realization wrung her heart. How terrible that her hero should run the risk of losing the election for such a reason! The idea

The Politician

became positive torture to her, and the night following Mr. Vernor's call she found herself quite unable to go to sleep as usual.

The knowledge that her friend, that Verney, was in such trouble, that he had the need of money to struggle against to bother him as well as the other hazards of the campaign, kept her awake. The picture of the Politician loaded down with care, harassed and anxious and pale as she had seen him once on that afternoon when they compared their poems on "Opportunity," would persist in appearing before her mental vision and prevented her from closing her eyes. At last she could bear it no longer. She sprang up, lit the gas and throwing a warm quilted robe about her, went to her desk. If he had no other friend to help him out in this emergency he had at least one. Why had n't she thought of it before. She would send him a cheque herself that very moment.

It was only one o'clock. Parker should post it that very night, so that Verney would get it the first thing in the morning and not suffer his distress of mind an instant longer than was necessary. With dark hair loosely tied back falling over one silk-clad shoulder and small fingers travelling swiftly over a page of her cheque book, in the simplest faith that as it was sent so would it be received — a simplicity by the way that always went hand in hand with her most generous impulses, her noblest deeds — Harriet filled out a cheque for twenty thousand dollars to the order of James Vernor Ellis. This she enclosed in an addressed envelope

Light

with her visiting card upon which she wrote the following lines :

“ Dear friend, accept this from a friend to use as you see fit, and save me from the distress of mind which the knowledge of your distress of mind for the lack of that of which I have so much, is causing me.”

Few words, in comparison to the magnitude of the gift accompanying them ; but the greatest deeds are done with the least noise, and they seemed to Harriet quite adequate to convey her meaning. Having despatched Parker grumbling on his midnight errand, she went back to bed, satisfied that she had done an eminently right and proper thing — the mere duty of a mere friend, and friendly she still believed her interest in the young man to be ; then she went to sleep, happy in the thought that the morning would find Verney free from care.

Ellis was lying on the lounge in his room at eleven o'clock the next day when a servant brought him up his letters. He had but lately returned from a tour of speech-making through the State with Oliver Ordway ; he had managed to exhaust every ounce of nervous energy in him during the process, and had received doctor's orders upon his return home not to leave his room or do any work of any kind for three days, if he wished to repair the damage done and prevent further mischief.

It was the second day of his imprisonment, for as such he regarded it, and the depression of spirits which always accompanied these periods of forced inaction

The Politician

had complete possession of him. His body might rest if compelled to, but his restless, eager mind would not. To-day it ran exclusively upon his old anxiety — where was he to find money to discharge the obligations he had already incurred, and those he would have yet to incur if he was to make any kind of a running against Vandewater? Where could he turn for help? to whom could he possibly go? The question revolved itself over and over in his brain until he thought he should go mad.

The arrival of Wilson, therefore, with his mail, was a welcome diversion.

“Thank you,” he said, throwing away the cigarette the doctor had forbidden him to smoke — the fifth that day — and reaching out his hand for the letters.

“Anything I can do, sir?” queried the servant, with a pitying glance at the languid movements of the young man, his dark-circled, sleepless eyes and colorless face.

“Don’t think so. Unless you brought me a whiskey and soda!” He smiled mischievously. He knew, and Wilson knew, that whiskey and soda, like the cigarettes, was on the condemned list.

“I’m afraid not, Mr. Verney; you know the doctor’s orders,” replied the man, a sympathetic note in his voice.

Verney smiled wearily. “Oh, yes, I know! Black beans three times a day and ennui all the time — was n’t that the bill of fare he was good enough to prescribe?”

Wilson was “afraid so” and withdrew.

The prisoner turned over his letters listlessly. The familiar faces of three bills “past due” confronted him,

Light

a letter in Harriet's handwriting, and an invitation. The first three he put aside unopened, scanned the last hurriedly and threw it in the grate — it was an invitation to dinner to meet a popular debutante of the season — and then turned eagerly to the letter from Harriet. He could n't imagine what she could have to say to him, but certainly she was a fine little girl; and although it seemed circumstances had decreed that they were to see no more of each other, that did not prevent him from taking pleasure in hearing from her.

It did not take him a moment when he had opened the envelope to read the few lines inscribed upon Miss Rand's visiting card, or the few figures inscribed on the cheque, but it did take him some time to grasp what it all meant. When he did, he lay very still with his arm across his eyes and the cheque between his fingers for a long, long time. And who shall say what temptation did not assail him, what glorious visions of obligations met, enemies defeated, the feel of that slip of blue paper did not conjure up? What overpowering impulse to accept what the gods had set before him, asking no question for conscience' sake, did not rise within him?

Never had the way been so dark before him as at that time. That sixteen thousand dollars which he had discovered it was necessary for him to make that year in order to cover his liabilities was just as far from realization as it had been a month ago; his campaign expenses grew heavier every day; and he had been able to spend practically no time at all in his law office since his nomination. And now, he had suddenly come into the

The Politician

possession of sufficient funds not only to meet his indebtedness, but to help him through his campaign as well! Here he held it in his very hand, a free gift from a friend whose wealth was so great that the loss of the amount sent would never be felt, a gift unsought and unsolicited by him, a cheque for twenty thousand dollars.

He rose and walked slowly to his desk and began at once to write a letter. He wrote slowly and with apparent difficulty, his lip held tight in his teeth and his brow knit, but when he had finished and had signed his name to what he had written, he looked up and nodded reassuringly at the picture of Abraham Lincoln on the wall.

It was Harriet who opened that letter (for it was to her he had been writing), in the beautiful old library in Mrs. Chittenden's house, her favorite sitting-room. It said:

"DEAR HARRIET:

"I am returning the cheque which you were so very kind as to send me yesterday. I would do so in person if the doctor had not ordered me to stay indoors for three days on account of a slight indisposition. I appreciate to the utmost the divine friendliness with which you sent it, the divine compassion and generosity which prompted the act, and I pray that my inability to accept it will not wound you; but Harrie dear, I can't take it. I can't explain why very well, but the fact is it's impossible for a man to accept obligations of that kind from a woman.

"Your very grateful friend,

"JAMES VERNOR ELLIS."

When Harriet had read to the end and had found enclosed the cheque she had sent off so happily, so joy-

Light

ously, her disappointment was so keen that the tears filled her eyes. She tore the rejected bank order in two and, bowing her head, cried and cried. She had wanted to help him, but she had not been allowed to! A convention, a mere notion of honor, a false pride, had kept him from accepting it. It had seemed so natural to help him, such a simple matter just to send the money and say no more about it, she could n't quite understand why she had not been able to. She had wanted to do it more than anything she had ever wanted to do before in her life, but this great joy had been denied her. She had so much money she could n't begin to use it all or a third of it, but she could not give any of it, not even so small a sum as twenty thousand dollars to her friend who needed it so much! Her sobs redoubled at the thought.

Why did she cry? Was it her friendship for him that made her feel the disappointment so cruelly? Was this emotion that was shaking her, friendship? The question arrested her tears. She stood on a sudden self-revealed — this girl who had never been in love before and had not for that reason been able to recognize it when it came to her, and she knew on the instant that it was love, not friendship, this feeling that had overwhelmed her; she knew that it was love, not the friendliness with which he had credited her, that had prompted her to wish to render Verney assistance — that had made her send him the cheque.

A glow that had its inception in her heart mounted to her brain and suffused her consciousness. She bowed

The Politician

her head again, but this time shed no tears. What happiness! She loved him!

It was thus she was found by a maid an hour later lying full length in a Morris chair, her cheek pressed close against the letter that had so lately left his hand. Harriet had forgotten that it was receiving day and she was sorry to hear that Mrs. William Merivale Gibbs had been shown into the drawing-room and had asked to see her. She would a little rather have seen no one on *that* day!

CHAPTER XVII

THE FURY OF A WOMAN SCORNE

IF any one had told Harriet Rand when she arrived in New York that summer of the Republican National Convention, that any act in the life of a woman whom she knew so little as she did Mrs. Willie Gibbs would have power to alter the current of her own, she would have scouted the idea as highly improbable.

Yet such was the case. An act of Mrs. Gibbs was potent to do just that thing, so to affect Harriet Rand that the heretofore favored and propitious course of her life should become all in a moment troubled and tumultuous. And this act was the young married woman's break with Verney Ellis, a break which had been thrust upon her by her own folly in opening his eyes to the true character of her professed friendship for him. Although entirely the result of her own error in judgment, Mrs. Gibbs's discomfiture on that occasion none the less resulted in a feeling of bitter anger against the cause of it; which in turn resulted in a determination that whatever happened he should not be allowed to marry Miss Rand. For the idea that this was Verney's unacknowledged end and aim had taken hold of that lady's brain with all the pertinacity of a delusion, and her determination to frustrate it was the only balm she

The Politician

had for the intolerable sting of wounded self-love. He must be punished for that humiliation, and since Harriet had been instrumental in bringing it about she did not much care if the weight of the punishment fell upon her as well. Having lost Verney herself, she had made up her mind that Harriet should lose him too; and that this would mean a certain amount of unhappiness for the girl she did not doubt, for she took it as a matter of course that the Chicago heiress was as much in love with the young politician as she, Mrs. Gibbs, supposed him to be with her.

It is an absurd comparison to use in connection with so beautiful a woman as Mrs. Willie Gibbs, to say that she resembled a red Indian on the warpath as she stood on the steps of Mrs. Cumloch's house in Forty-ninth Street, the afternoon following the memorable scene with Verney; yet no savage in war paint and feathers on a still hunt for a scalp could have had less pity or more hate in his heart, than she when she asked to see Miss Rand.

Harriet, with flushed cheeks and bright eyes as the only signs of her late emotion, received her with great apparent cordiality, although in truth the girl was a little surprised to receive a call from Mrs. Gibbs, their acquaintance was so slight.

"How do you do?" she said; "how very nice of you to come!" And she explained how sorry she was her aunt was not in.

Mrs. Gibbs acquiesced politely in this regret, although

A Woman Scorned

she reflected privately that the circumstance was a fortunate one. Mrs. Cumloch's presence would effectually have prevented her from carrying out the plan she had in mind.

The conversation was at first rather forced and devoted chiefly to the discussion of the advantages of life in an apartment, and the fall styles in clothes; but it leaped presently, for neither Harriet nor Mrs. Gibbs was stupid, from this plane of commonplace to the rarer heights of literature and art, and they were soon discussing everything from Ibsen to Gibson, Harriet with the accuracy of the thoroughly well-informed, and her caller with the random brilliancy of a quick but ill-trained mind. The young girl thought the older woman had never seemed so attractive, and even went so far as to regret that she had called her, even in her mind, "fast." Not a single remark that could be construed as "broad" did Cora Gibbs utter that afternoon; only the most charming things, clever, friendly, and joyous. Harriet became more and more entranced, yielding up her guileless, sincere heart to this captivating witch in utter ignorance of the jealous purpose behind this seeming graciousness that was rendering the witch's heart, though usually mild and merciful enough, as hard as flint.

Mrs. Gibbs beheld her hostess's increasing favor with satisfaction. Step number one was accomplished. She had gained her victim's confidence. The next one was more difficult, perhaps, for the conversation had to be

The Politician

brought around to Verney Ellis. But this too she achieved with the same consummate skill. Harriet was made to mention his name herself.

"Was n't it splendid about Oliver Ordway's getting the nomination for Governor?" asked Mrs. Gibbs in a carefully casual tone, when the need for a new topic of conversation made itself felt for a moment; "Agnes was so delighted!"

"Yes, and about Vernor Ellis getting the nomination for Attorney-general, too," said Harriet quickly, anxious that her hero should get his due of praise.

"Oh, decidedly! I think so too. I was just as pleased and excited about that,—only of course I know Agnes Ordway so well and I was specially pleased that she was n't disappointed," replied the other. "Verney Ellis, you know"—she smiled—"is a great admiration of mine! I'm years older than he is"—crafty admission,—“but I'm not ashamed to admit I think he's the very brightest, most charming boy I know.”

This frank avowal disarmed Harriet, and any doubts she might have had as to the nature of Mrs. Gibbs's admiration for Verney were swallowed up in the conviction that it had never been anything but friendly and impersonal. She felt now that she could speak of Verney to Mrs. Gibbs without any feeling of self-consciousness. And it was a relief. She loved to talk about the Politician, and Mrs. Gibbs seemed to know him so well.

"He is bright and charming," she said sweetly, "and most awfully clever! Don't you think so?"

A Woman Scorned

“He’s brilliant. I’ve known him since childhood, and his mentality has always impressed me with its superiority.”

“He said you were one of his oldest friends,” remarked the girl, looking up innocently.

Mrs. Gibbs winced. It was all very well to admit her years herself, but to hear it from the lips of such fresh, dazzling youth was unpleasant. However, things like this she knew had to be with every famous victory; so she swallowed the pill bravely and returned to the attack. “Dear me, yes!” she agreed; “I’ve looked after him and been an elder sister to him ever since I can remember.”

“How well you must know him!” enviously.

Mrs. Gibbs smiled and with such apparent kindness that the triumphant nature of the smile was quite disguised from Harriet. Another step had been accomplished. Miss Rand had been brought to realize that Mrs. Gibbs’s acquaintance with Verney was of long standing and her knowledge of him likely to be founded on fact, and was therefore properly prepared to take as law any hint Mrs. Gibbs might see fit to drop regarding any principle or theory the young man might entertain. Say, for instance, his views on the incompatibility of marriage with the pursuance of a political career. And this of course was necessary. Her authority must be established, for like the most successful of diplomats, she was relying upon the truth for the successful execution of her design, and what she was going to tell Harriet that afternoon was nothing if not true.

The Politician

Her only care was to make Harriet appreciate that fact.

"I shall be very much interested in the State elections this year," Mrs. Gibbs said next, "knowing as I do three of the candidates for office."

"Three?" enquired Harriet.

"Yes. Two on the Republican ticket and one on the Democratic, Verney, Oliver Ordway, and Billy Vandewater."

"Oh, Mr. Vandewater! I forgot about him."

"He became the Democratic candidate for Attorney-general — at the last moment, you know. Really, it was rather strange,—the whole business. I never knew him to be interested in politics before, and his resolution to run was so sudden." She looked keenly at Harriet as she spoke. Some hint of the rivalry between the two men for Miss Rand's favor had gotten out and reached her ears, and she wondered if it had had anything to do with Vandewater's hasty leap into the political ring in direct opposition to Verney.

It had, of course, had everything to do with it, but Harriet's utter unconsciousness of that fact enabled her to put Mrs. Gibbs's conclusions on the subject to confusion.

"Was it sudden?" she said, innocently. "I didn't know. But then I don't know a great deal about Mr. Vandewater anyway." The indifference of her tone seemed to say she didn't care to, either.

"You're not betting on him, then?" said the other, tentatively, anxious to draw Harriet out on the sub-

A Woman Scorned

ject of her regard for the contesting candidates for Attorney-general as far as possible.

“No, are you?” — in surprise. “Surely he has n’t the character or integrity that Mr. Ellis has! Little as I know him, I seem to feel that!” Her tone and face were glowing.

Mrs. Gibbs was quite satisfied. It was just as she thought. The girl was heels over head in love with Verney. Well, she should n’t have him, just the same! The registry of this primitive, elementary vow was marked by a hard line about its author’s beautiful mouth.

“No, he has n’t,” agreed the older woman. “He’s bright in his way, Billy, but you’re quite right; he has n’t the character Verney has.”

“I can’t imagine his not winning. I can’t imagine their not wanting him!” said Harriet.

“Who? Verney? No. He’ll win. He’s that kind of man.”

Harriet’s Madonna eyes loomed big and black at her caller. “And it won’t be the last time he’ll win, either,” she said. “I believe” — her voice rang a little — “that the country has no better single hope of political reform — of obtaining better government — than its hope in him.”

Mrs. Gibbs stared. Here was enthusiasm with a vengeance. How like Verney that speech sounded! He was always talking about “the country!” The girl was certainly in love with him! Why, she was even taking all his theories and ambitions about politics seri-

The Politician

ously! Though she was ever so fond of the young man herself, she knew she never had been able to be interested in his work. If it had not aroused a fury of jealous rage and envy in her, Harriet's artless revelation of the extravagant nature of her infatuation for Ellis would have made Mrs. Gibbs feel inclined to laugh.

She recovered her usual equable poise very quickly, however. It would not do to let the girl see that she resented her intimate possessive interest in a man whom she had so long regarded as her own especial property. That the property in question had very lately and with a definiteness that was unmistakable, broken from her hold, did not make her resentment less, but rather increased it. She would have given worlds for the right to resent, and the consciousness that she had it no longer lent an extra smart to her wound.

"Oh, yes," she agreed quickly, "he'll go far, no doubt!" She meant, as Harriet had not, in the way of holding office. "That is, if he's able to keep his resolution." This with deliberate carefulness.

"Has he one? Any specific one?" asked Harriet indifferently. "I had n't heard of it."

Her indifference was very near to foiling Mrs. Gibbs's purpose. The latter saw at once that it would be necessary to pique her hostess's curiosity in order to interest her in what she had to say, what must be said, in fact, in order to attain her ends.

"I suppose not," she said. "He would n't be likely to tell it to you."

A Woman Scorned

Harriet was silent a moment. She could n't help wanting to know what it could be that Verney would n't be likely to speak about to her, but she did n't want to ask Mrs. Gibbs. She felt somehow, instinctively, though for what reason she could n't imagine, that it would gratify that lady to have her ask. But her curiosity was too much for her.

"What is his resolution?" she asked.

Mrs. Gibbs's heart leaped with joy.

"He's made up his mind not to marry," she said quietly. "He thinks — and I agree with him — that he can't marry and go in for public life, too. That he would n't have time to do both. On the theory that a good artist does n't make a good husband, you know."

Harriet showed no sign that this intelligence was at all disturbing.

"And why would n't he be likely to tell me that? He seems to have told you."

"Oh, my dear!" — with a deprecating laugh, — "don't you see? I'm a married woman and an old friend; of course he confides in me. And although he might confide in you on almost any subject, he could n't about that! Don't you know him well enough to realize that he could n't tell that to a young unmarried girl, just because she was young and unmarried? He'd think, you know, that people would be justified in calling him a conceited ass if he went around warning his girl friends that he was n't a marrying man."

This sounded very reasonable to Harriet — very like the truth.

The Politician

"Yes, I do see that," said she. "That would be rather silly."

Mrs. Gibbs nodded. "And then of course he's had the idea so long now that he's not going to marry, it would n't occur to him to talk about it. He's grown used to it."

"I suppose it's a real necessity, his resolution?" said Harriet, in a rather puzzled voice. She had so little suspected the existence of an incontrovertible prejudice against love on the part of the Politician, it was so difficult to reconcile it with her knowledge of him so far, that she was slow in grasping the significance of Mrs. Gibbs's revelation and in perceiving how it might bear upon her discovery of the real state of her own feelings toward the young man.

"Beyond a doubt," returned Cora Gibbs. "If you knew what a struggle it was for him as it is to find time to do all he undertakes, to keep up with his law practice and his political work, too, you'd understand at once the impossibility of his undertaking domestic cares. Verney married would be Verney without a career. He simply could n't do it!"

"Not even if his wife had money?" Harriet's tone was a shade combative. She was beginning to realize that Mrs. Gibbs had some motive not apparent on the surface, for discussing at such length Verney's ideas on the subject of matrimony, and that it was not an altogether friendly one. Her anxiety to inform Harriet upon every detail was rather too manifest.

Mrs. Gibbs looked up surprised. She had not ex-

A Woman Scorned

pected argument from her victim but only acquiescence in her fiat. The emergency demanded a decisive blow.

"Oh, my dear!" she expostulated, "if he had made such a resolution — that he would n't marry, because he could n't do that and remain in politics too, without being unfair to his wife,— could he, do you think, let the possibility that his wife might have money make any difference?"

Harriet did not answer. The logic of Mrs. Gibbs's question was indisputable. She knew Verney too well to fail to see that as a man of honor he could not let that possibility make any difference.

"He's a man of strong will," continued the other; "a resolution once made, he never alters it."

This statement she made because she wanted Harriet to believe it, not because she believed it herself. For of course the truth was that she did not have any such confidence in Verney's will, but rather feared that if sufficient temptation presented itself he would break his resolution. Was n't it that very fear, that he was at that time on the point of breaking it, that had brought her to see Harriet?

Miss Rand sighed. She was almost beaten.

"What if he fell in love?" she asked, but in a tone of wavering confidence. A pain that had made itself felt, although faintly, with the first word Mrs. Gibbs spoke in regard to Verney's belief that he must of necessity remain a bachelor, was growing big and bigger in her heart.

"He would never fall in love," replied her enemy,

The Politician

swooping eagerly upon this chance to end the combat by a mortal thrust. "He's been too long armored by his conviction that he must remain unmarried, to run the risk of making himself unhappy in that way. He may make love" — she glanced with half concealed triumph at the still face of the girl, and herein lay the real sting of her whole discourse,— "I've no doubt he does, but he does n't mean a word of it. He's the most conscienceless flirt in the world, absolutely insincere and irresponsible. You see from the very nature of things he can't very well be anything else. And you'd be surprised, Miss Rand, you would indeed, if you knew how easy the women make it for him."

She smiled, and Harriet instantly became convinced, as Mrs. Gibbs had meant her to, that she was one of the women who had "made it easy" for Verney. It came suddenly home to her as she sat and watched her caller smile, that if it was true that Verney did not intend to marry, conversely it must be true that any indication of interest from him, no matter how warm it might seem to be, must mean nothing. Friendship it might mean, of course, but friendship to her was nothing. When the heart asks for love no other sentiment will answer.

As this terrible thought found place in Harriet's consciousness her mind went rapidly back and reviewed, each with a separate pang, the various occasions upon which Verney by word or look or speech had endeared himself to her, and which she had thought proved she was dear to him. Only that day she had come to the

A Woman Scorned

conclusion that her feeling for him was love, but the complementary feeling that he cared a little for her, had been present, too, though unconsciously. The possibility which she felt she was justified in considering, that he might care at some future time, was present in her mind at the beginning of her talk with Mrs. Gibbs, but of this possibility that lady's remarks on the subject of Verney and his principles had robbed her.

She leaned back suddenly in her chair. As she thought it over, it all seemed only too likely to be true. In the light of Mrs. Gibbs's revelations his hitherto inexplicable conduct toward her ever since the horse-show, his apparent devotion to her at one time and his indifference at another, was explained. He had never been serious from the start, why then should he be consistent? No, she had been mistaken. She had misinterpreted his interest in her. He had never meant anything at all either by speech or look or act, not even by written word! A voiceless sob arose in her at that thought, as she remembered one sentence in the note which she had just received from him which seemed proof of the existence of a tenderness for her: where he said, "But, Harrie dear, I can't take it!" She was so happy when she read it; now she knew she must never think of it again, that it meant nothing, that it was only his way of talking and writing to women, that it was all a mistake, that she had deceived herself!

The conviction came as a revelation to her, in spite of the fact that she had always been aware from the first moment of meeting him, that Verney was fond of

The Politician

and used to feminine society, and she turned very pale. It is difficult for even the least egotistical of us to escape the fallacy of supposing that we are ourselves exceptions to any rule; and the two discoveries Harriet had made within twenty-four hours — that her feeling for Verney was love, and that his for her had never been and never could be anything but friendship — were on that account none the less of a shock to her. Her paleness frightened Mrs. Gibbs. It left no doubt in her mind that her work was done; that Harriet had been made to see that the Politician was not for her, that she must turn her thoughts from him; and for a complete estrangement between the two she relied upon the girl's pride, which she thought would cause her to avoid Verney and effectually prevent explanations. At the same time her jealousy had made her more vindictive than she at first intended to be, and the sight of the girl's suffering inspired a tardy and faint remorse.

"What is it?" she said, leaning anxiously toward Harriet. "What is the matter?"

"Nothing," was the courageous reply. "Nothing."

"But you are so pale. Shall I get you some water?" She rose and bent over the nerveless form of her young hostess.

Harriet, who had not until then been conscious of any feeling except despair, was now aware of another feeling — of a flood of burning indignation and resentment against the speaker. In spite of the seeming solicitude manifested in the beautiful face bending over her, she saw in it nothing but enmity toward her, and

A Woman Scorned

in the brilliant hazel eyes nothing but triumph. Her unsuspecting, trusting nature was at last aroused to the true character of her caller, and she saw that this apparently casual visit had been made with a purpose, to destroy her happiness in Verney. She threw out one hand, as if to ward off and repudiate the other's offer of assistance, and sprang to her feet. The fine rich color flooded her white face, and her voice trembled, yet she spoke deliberately and with dignity.

"I don't believe a word you tell me about Mr. Ellis!" she said. "I consider you incapable of speaking the truth!" And then in a low, heartrending tone that proved this spirited defiance the last rally of pride, that proved she feared that her visitor spoke the truth, "What have I ever done to you that you should hurt me so?"

Conscience-stricken and without a word — for she was, after all, a woman and possessed in a measure of the softer attributes of womanhood,— Mrs. Gibbs hurried from the room and let herself out of the house without waiting for maid or butler to perform that office for her, and immersed herself in her carriage. One might have thought from her haste that she was afraid the bloody scalp dangling at her belt would be observed.

CHAPTER XVIII

WHAT MONEY CANNOT BUY

ON the evening of the same day that had already proved so momentous for Harriet and was to prove still more so before it was done, she received a call from Verney Ellis, the very person she was most anxious to see, since her whole hope was now centred in the possibility that Mrs. Gibbs was mistaken, and his "resolution" and consequent insincerity a figment of her fancy. For although the beautiful Mrs. Willie had succeeded in hurting Harriet by informing her of Verney's conviction that he could not marry, and the light treatment of herself on his part that it implied, she had not succeeded in reducing her to that state of hopeless broken-heartedness which would have led her to give Verney up without further words and at once to cut short her stay in New York.

Harriet's acceptance of Mrs. Gibbs's statement of the case was not so unquestioned as that, although it had seemed so in the first moment of suffering. Her faith in Verney was stronger than Mrs. Gibbs had any idea of; and upon thinking it all over when her enemy had gone, she was more than half inclined to believe that there was something wrong somewhere, that there was some aspect of the situation which Mrs. Gibbs had

What Money Cannot Buy

overlooked or had not taken into account, and that she could learn what it was from Verney. In holding this opinion she was very wise. The element that the young married woman had overlooked was the existence of a very real attachment on the young man's part for Harriet; and his struggle, in the interests of his chosen work, to prevent this from becoming a warmer feeling, accounted far more satisfactorily and justly for the apparent insincerity of his conduct toward Harriet than did Mrs. Gibbs's charge that he was a hardened and heartless flirt.

The term of imprisonment which the doctor had imposed upon him had not altogether passed, but his restless soul had not been able to abide in patience the last minute of it; and on this, the evening of the third day, he had dressed, gone down to dinner, and left the house shortly afterwards to go and call upon Harriet. It was in direct defiance, of course, of his resolution to see no more of her; but he thought that by saying to her now what he had on his mind to say, there would be less probability of his breaking it again.

The incident of the twenty-thousand-dollar cheque worried him considerably. He was very glad his illness had been sufficient reason for his returning it by letter, for he hated the idea of a personal transaction of that ungracious nature between them; but thank her in person also he must. It was such an astonishing thing for her to do, such an undreamed-of act of friendship, generous beyond belief! Really, it seemed to prove such a devotion to him that, although he knew Harriet's

The Politician

interest in politics by this time had become almost a hobby, it was difficult to account for it altogether in that way. He began, in short, to be a little puzzled to account for it, unless in a way that made his face grave with anxiety and his teeth close nervously on his lower lip. He could not, he must not think of that! Yet the thought would come to him, and it made him tremble. What horrible thing had he done now? Had disastrous consequences, unsuspected by him, resulted from this sweet, enthralling friendship with this sweet, enthralling girl? He devoutly hoped not, but it was with a good deal of apprehension that he found himself in the library waiting for Harriet to come down, and with the resolute determination that some time during the evening, in an impersonal, general sort of way, of course, if he had the chance, he would explain to his friend the position he was in and the exact state of the case; he would show how his political ambitions affected the question of his marrying and of his resolution in that regard. If the slightest germ of an idea of the kind he dreaded had begun to take possession of her, it would be the only fair thing to do to show her its impossible nature.

Harriet's cordial, frank manner when she did come down relieved his mind not a little. Before her friendly smile his misgivings utterly vanished. He began even to feel ashamed to think he had given way to them and to accuse himself mentally of deserving the epithet of "conceited ass" he had been at such pains to avoid so long, and of meriting which he had expressed such

What Money Cannot Buy

abhorrence to Mrs. Gibbs. Her matter-of-fact treatment of the episode of the cheque, the unembarrassed calm with which she told him that she had hoped to be able to help him in that way but that she saw now it was impossible, that it was nothing at all for him to be grateful about, and she'd rather he would forget the whole incident, and the fact that she then dismissed the subject, served to convince him further that his apprehensions had been unfounded.

But even while he became certain that he had been wrong in attributing to her a warmer feeling for him than friendship, he realized that the danger of his developing a warmer feeling for her was still present; accordingly, his determination to keep himself in the future beyond the reach of it became firmer than ever. She had never seemed so fascinating to him as she did that evening. An unusual and beautiful color glowed in her cheeks, and the luminous blackness of her eyes was a miracle to behold. And then her thought for him, her superb offer of assistance on the instant that she heard of his need, had touched him too nearly, was too recent not to have left him very tender toward her. He didn't know of any other friend he had, man or woman, that would have done as much for him.

"That's a wonderful frock," he said, the first words of greeting over and the subject of the cheque disposed of in the matter-of-fact manner that was so satisfactory to him. "Where this side of heaven did you find anything so entrancing?"

"Aunt Lydia found it for me," said Harriet; "but

The Politician

I'm glad you like it, I like it so much myself!" She laughed happily. It didn't matter to her what they said or whether they talked at all, it was just enough to look at him. It was so infinitely blessed to be with him again, to have him sitting right by her there on the divan! No detail of him, neither his smooth dark head with the hair brushed well away from the parting, nor the thin curve of his lips, nor the clear brilliance of his blue eyes under their straight, heavy brows, escaped her — except for the absence of color in his face she would never have known he had been ill.

The peace of the moment was indescribably sweet to her; how could she, she wondered, disturb it by setting herself to the task of finding out if what Mrs. Gibbs had told her about him that afternoon was true; if he had any such adamant prejudice against the tender passion as that lady had declared he had; and if he was indeed the cold-blooded incarnation of insincerity he had been declared to be. She would not do it. She must know, of course, how it was with him sooner or later, and she intended to find out that evening before he left, but not yet. Not just that minute!

"I hope you are feeling quite well again?" she said. "I was alarmed when you said in your note that the doctor had forbidden you to go out for three days!"

"Oh, he always does that," said Ellis; "if I am ever foolish enough to admit I don't feel up to the mark he comes down on me with a three-days' verdict. Next time I won't tell him!" He smiled.

What Money Cannot Buy

"This campaign has been very hard on you," she said.

"Yes. Night has been like day to me, I've had so much to do."

"And how are things going?" She leaned toward him anxiously. She feared from what Mr. Vernor had told her that they were going far from well.

Verney's face grew very grave.

"I rather think the Democrats will elect an Attorney-general this year," he said.

She gave an exclamation of dismay. "Oh, Verney, no!"

He nodded. "I'm afraid so. And I am sorry, too. Vandewater is not just the man I'd like to see in the office. He's not an able lawyer, in the first place; and he has n't the faintest conception of public duty, in the second."

"Then he won't be elected."

He smiled at her faith in the fitness of things as a factor in elections. "Well, I don't know. However, it won't bother me much if he is, so long as New York elects a Republican Governor!"

She looked at him in amazement. He was evidently in an excessively disheartened mood that evening. She thought it must be because he had been ill, it was so unlike him even to admit the possibility of defeat.

"Oh, but you must," she said; "you must care! You'll never win if you don't. And you must win! Things look black to you now, perhaps, but it's only

The Politician

a mood, it's only a temporary condition of things, I'm sure."

He shook his head.

His hopelessness alarmed her. She feared it as an indication that he was going to fail. She wondered despairfully what she could do to rouse his fighting spirit again, to restore him to his old state of confidence in himself.

"Do you often read the Bible?" she asked abruptly.

Astonished, he answered, "Yes. I think it's the finest literature in the English language."

"Do you read it to get help, too?" she pursued.

"Yes," he said again consideringly. "Why?"

"Because I thought if you did it would be interesting to try a way of getting help from it that I've heard about all my life from an old sewing-woman that's lived with us for ages — at home in Lake Forest, you know. Her name's Dilly, and she's the dearest, funniest old soul! You don't know what she's been to me." The eyes of the motherless girl filled with tears at the memory of her old friend's kindness. "Why, I could n't get along at all without Dilly!"

"What is it? The way, I mean?" he said, more interested in the evidence of feeling Harriet displayed, perhaps, than in her plan.

"Why, she says, Dilly says, that if you're in trouble or doubt, or if things are going wrong with you, that if you open the Bible anywhere, it does n't matter where, you'll always find something to fit your particular need."

What Money Cannot Buy

She rose, went to a table, and took from it a fat brown Bible. "Let's try!" she said.

Her manner was half smiling, half serious, and the young man felt the cloud of pessimism and discouragement that obsessed him lift a little as he looked at her. The child-like faith with which she had proposed this superstitious way of helping him out of his black mood touched him and appealed to his listless spirit.

"Let's," he assented with a brighter expression than he had yet had, and they sat down together on the divan, the big book resting on their laps.

"Now open it!" she said confidently. "You shut your eyes, though, first, Dilly says, and then open the Bible and put your finger on a page without looking, and then look and see what you have found."

"All right!" he agreed; "I'll open the book and put my finger on the page, but I won't shut my eyes unless you promise not to pinch me or burn my hand with a cigarette!"

"Oh, how can you be so silly?" she laughed. "And you should n't make fun about the Bible! It's wicked!"

"I'm not making fun," he declared indignantly. "It would n't be funny at all to be pinched or burned!"

"Hurry up!" she admonished, "and try. I'm so curious to see if it works!"

He closed his eyes, opened the Bible, and placed a challenging forefinger on one side of the left page. She hung over him breathless with excitement to behold the result of Dilly's recipe for curing worried people.

The Politician

"Oh, look!" she cried. "Oh, look!"

He looked. His finger was upon the eleventh verse of the ninth chapter of Ecclesiastes, and he read it aloud, slowly and wonderingly.

"I returned, and saw under the sun, that the race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong, neither yet bread to the wise, nor yet riches to men of understanding, nor yet favour to men of skill; but time and chance happeneth to them all."

"'But time and chance happeneth to them all!'" she repeated, her eyes wide with wonder.

He closed the Bible and put it back on the little table where it was kept.

"It worked all right," he said, returning to her, though he did not sit down. "Dilly is a wonder. I can't think of anything in the Good Book that more directly applies to my case. It as good as says, 'Don't let the material advantages which your antagonist has over you discourage you, for the battle is not always to the strong, nor riches to men of understanding.' In other words, every man has an equal chance, and the man who tries his utmost, does the very best he can, need not despair. Yes" — thoughtfully, — "I think Dilly's plan a very good one."

They were both silent a moment, he leaning musingly against the high mantelpiece, she sitting with her hands clasped and a glad look in her face. She had wanted to help him in this the darkest hour of the campaign, and she had succeeded.

"May I smoke?" he asked, and came over and took a chair near her. "I feel better, more hopeful," he

What Money Cannot Buy

told her, "about the campaign. I was discouraged when I came; I get that way once in a while. Because I want so much to win, I suppose. You see it means a great deal more to me to have Ordway succeed and to succeed myself, than only a personal or party triumph. We're not running for office only because we're anxious for our own interests, but because we're so much the nearer to restoring public confidence in the kind of men they call politicians, and to restoring faith in the organization; and you see, if we make good, if people find we're not simply working for ourselves, if they find we're working for the best good of the public, it will go far toward accomplishing that.

"Oh, I feel it so strongly!" — he got up and threw his cigarette in the fireplace — "that the purification of our politics rests upon the purification of the men in control, not upon the destruction of the political organization itself!"

Harriet watched him and never afterwards forgot how he looked,—striding up and down before her in his earnestness, young, ardent, and aspiring. She looked at him with desperate admiration, a defiant clinging to her old feeling of hero-worship that was the result of her conviction that soon, very soon, she must ask him, indirectly or directly, whether Mrs. Gibbs's judgment of him was the true one.

"It's a great cause to champion," she said. "I'm very proud of you for championing it! Are there many interested in it?"

"Yes! A great many, but not enough, not enough!"

The Politician

he spoke impatiently. "Numbers of things seem more important than politics to most men! They're more easily interested in other things."

A tremor of anticipation shook her. The moment had come when the painful task she had set herself must be begun.

"In girls?" She smiled.

He looked at her quickly as if the coincidence of her introducing the subject upon which he had made up his mind to speak to her that evening, the subject of the inexpediency of marriage for the man in politics, had aroused a suspicion that she knew he had so determined. But her face was innocent and calm. The opening had been given him by accident. Relieved at the ease with which he had found it, he rushed ahead.

"Yes," he said, "they get interested in girls. In getting married. And in order to keep their families they go into business,—scores of them for every one that goes into politics. There's no money in politics, you know. I mean of course for an honest man. So, you see, an honest man without means can't afford to adopt that career for his life's work. Not if he's married and has other people dependent on him. And then, if he can afford to, the chances are that a big interest like that in his life—if he's married, I mean,—will make him unwilling or unable to give his time to politics. That's the main reason," his voice did not falter, "why I myself have never been able to think of marrying. I want to give all my time, except just enough to earn my daily bread, to politics."

What Money Cannot Buy

"How much you care about it all!" said Harriet, leaning back against the cushions of the lounge, the sudden need of support strong upon her.

"Yes," he assented gravely, "more than for anything else in the world. It's the work I love, and I must devote myself to it with singleness of purpose without letting anything else, any other interest, have a place in my thoughts!"

She understood him. He meant by any other interest, Love. She suffered at the thought.

"Is n't it a big price to pay?" she said.

"Perhaps, but we must pay a price for anything that's worth while, and for myself I'm content that it should be so. I should consider it ignoble to accept the gift of life without giving something in return." He paused. "I wish I could make you understand how I feel about my work," he added wistfully, in an unconscious endeavor to justify to her, as if he felt she had a right to ask justification of him, his determination to put happiness that had to do with the affections out of his life. "I feel the same way about it as a man I know did about his wife. He lost her very suddenly; he thought the world of her, and she died."

"Poor fellow!" said Harriet, forcing herself to attend. "How did he bear it?"

"He did n't. He gave up. Left his business; luckily he could afford to; and all he does in the world now is to sit and read. He reads three or four books a day, he tells me, just as fast as he can, so as too keep his mind from the loss of her, and that in spite of the fact

The Politician

that his eyes are bad, and that oculists have told him if he keeps on he'll be blind in a year or so."

Harriet was interested in spite of herself. "How awful!" she said. "And he still keeps on?"

"Yes. He does n't care whether he goes blind or not, you see. He does n't care about anything any more." He was silent a moment. Then he said, "That's the way I feel about my work: if I had to give it up I'd never be able to interest myself in anything else. I'd read myself blind,—just as he's doing."

"I see," she said faintly.

"It is n't that I don't *want* to marry, you understand," he added, a new thought striking him; "only that I can't if I do anything else. Of course, I want to, every man does, and all the more because I know that kind of happiness is denied me. All my life I've wanted what I can't have!" He spoke with passion, and the girl, in spite of the pain his words caused her, felt her heart go out to him in sympathy. She understood as she had not done before how well Verney knew the value of what he was giving up, and she admired him involuntarily for his character in being able to do so in spite of that knowledge. "So I leave the marrying to others. I've got my work to do," he ended, and there was a finality about the words that made Harriet recognize beyond the shadow of a doubt that Mrs. Gibbs had spoken the truth regarding the young man's principles. She saw plainly — with what inward grief and bitter disappointment only she knew — that henceforth she and this man she had so recently begun to idolize must

What Money Cannot Buy

go separate ways, that since his friendship had not been enough for her he must be nothing to her, that she must see him no more.

She did not try to think at the moment whether Mrs. Gibbs's charge that he had been insincere and lacking in honorable conduct toward her, was true as well; that was lost sight of in the great elementary fact that no matter whether they loved each other or not, whether she loved him or he loved her, they could never have each other. That was the one point her brain had grasped as a result of this conversation with Verney. Beside it the ins and outs of how it had all happened mattered nothing. The blow had fallen, and she cared not whether it was her fault or his that she had so deceived herself, and that she was enduring at that moment such intolerable suffering. She rose and confronted him as he leaned against the tall mantelpiece, his eyes on the floor.

"Then you're not going to marry any one?" she asked with heart-breaking sweetness, a low note of tragedy in her voice.

"I can't," said Verney, without looking at her.

"Ever?" she said, still in that same voice.

"No," he said. He knew that he had to say it, but it was harder than he had thought. A horrible fear came over him that his premonition had been right after all, her feeling for him was more than friendship.

The uncontrollable tears filled Harriet's eyes. She bit her lips till they were white, they would tremble so.

"It's been so nice to see you," she said, as if the call

The Politician

were at an end and he had spoken of going. "Come and tell me about the campaign when you have time."

Verney saw that it was over and that he could go, and he saw too, that strangely enough he did not want to go. The color rushed to his face and tender words to his lips. Renunciation and gratified ambition seemed of a sudden meaningless and empty things; and the only desirable things in life the gift of warm red blood and the love of woman. He knew that if he had let himself, he could have loved this girl. The pause before he spoke was in reality not more than a few seconds in duration but to him it seemed æons long. As they stood gazing at each other a newsboy's cry outside in the street broke the stillness.

"Extry! Extry! Republican candidate for Governor scores rival!" came the loud hoarse voice and trailed away down the street.

It was like a call to battle in Verney's ears, very faint and far off, but a distinct call just the same. He started and spoke.

"Thanks," he said earnestly; "I will." A second's hesitation and then very low, "And you don't know what it means to me to have a friend like you."

Then he left her.

Now it is to be chronicled at this juncture that if Harriet Rand had given way to the extent of one sob to the storm of emotion struggling within her, if she had said so much as one word in protest against her fate, if it had been only his name, "Verney!" that almost anything might have happened. Say, for instance, that

What Money Cannot Buy

he would have caught her in his arms and held her to him and told her not to cry ; that he did n't care half as much for his old politics as he did for her, that he loved her, he really did, and any amount of other foolishness.

But that sob did not escape, that word did not pass her lips, and he was able to leave the house without meeting the Madonna eyes and the look of deathly hurt in them. For Harriet Rand was and always had been what George Benton called a " dead game sport." She could not keep the tears from starting, but she could and did keep them from falling.

So that Vernor Ellis, if he had but known it, should have been grateful to the girl all his days, since what he had done had been what he wanted to do most ; for without her coöperation in that crucial moment he could hardly have won through that day and been able to abide by his resolution. Had she been of weaker stuff, it is safe to say it would have been the career, not the girl, that the Politician would have renounced. Even as it was, the result of their conversation was that Verney had at last been brought to see his responsibility. What all Mrs. Gibbs's lectures on the subject and his uncle's advice had failed to accomplish, the sound of grief in Harriet's voice had accomplished in a moment. Not that he for an instant believed that Harriet was actually and already in love with him, but only that with her faltering question, " Then you 're not going to marry any one? " the idea had occurred to him with a positiveness no man could doubt, which Verney through his lack of vanity had doubted too long, perhaps, for the girl's

The Politician

peace of mind, that if he were to try, if he should make it his business to try to win her affections, he would stand a very big chance of succeeding.

For him, then, to have realized this possibility at that moment, caring as much for her as he did, and not to have put his arms about her and committed himself to caring more, was nothing short of heroic; in Verney Ellis more than another man, for a genuinely kind heart and an intense aversion to causing suffering were eminently characteristic of him.

The thought that comforted him the most afterwards whenever a guilty sense of his responsibility in the matter came over him was that it would not have been right to Harriet to behave otherwise than he had done. For he knew better than any one else that the only kind of devotion he had to offer any woman was at best a divided one; and he had seen for himself in the case of Agnes Ordway, that unhappiness, and danger of worse where the woman was concerned, was the inevitable result of that divided devotion.

That he should ask Harriet to occupy the kind of anomalous position that Mrs. Ordway occupied as the wife of a politician, neglected and forced into other company than her husband's for diversion, seemed to him unthinkable; and the idea that she might through him acquire that pathetic loneliness of look that the older woman had to such a degree made him congratulate himself a dozen times for her sake — that he had not yielded to the temptation to take what a subtle something in the air seemed to hint might perhaps be his for the

What Money Cannot Buy

taking. Then too he could not but believe that his giving up his chance with Miss Rand had no greater significance as far as she was concerned than the withdrawal of a promising entry on her matrimonial books — as he put the thing to himself — and that some other competitor would rank as high as he had and higher before they were closed.

It was these two convictions which saved him on that agitating evening from the greatest unhappiness a loyal, high-principled, warm-hearted young man can have — the knowledge that through his thoughtlessness a girl in every way entitled to a man's love has begun to think more of him than it is in his power to reciprocate, and gave him the courage not to respond in spite of the promptings of a heart that said: "Do it! Do it! Don't let her marry some one else, marry her yourself!"

As for Harriet, she too came in time to see that what had happened was for the best for her and for him. That with his ambitions he could never be happy if he were to marry, since he thought it was inevitable that the one thing must interfere with the other — and that it was true as Mrs. Gibbs had said, that Verney married would be Verney without a career. And both women were right in believing this, that with every intention to the contrary, Verney was naturally of too kind a heart to be capable of always sacrificing his wife's claims upon his time to the claims of his work, and that it would mean eventually his withdrawal from politics.

To ask this of the kind of enthusiast that Verney was,

The Politician

Harriet grew to realize would be cruel, and that though he might make the sacrifice cheerfully he would never be able to forget that he had made it. Although he might seem to be content once it had been made, she felt that like the soldier who abandons the army to please his wife, he would always hear the bugles blowing, and that not all the kisses in the world could keep the sound of them from his ears. And then again she did not want him to give up his career. She believed in him and the good he was going to do if he achieved his ambitions, and she was patriotic enough to want him to succeed. She cared so much for him that, even if she had not believed in him, she still wanted him to remain in politics if that was his heart's desire. She saw, too, and this was perhaps the thought that comforted her the most, that what Mrs. Gibbs had said about his insincerity and indifference to his responsibilities was unjust and false.

Harriet was too noble herself not to acquit him instantly of such an ignoble charge as that, when she heard him set forth with such earnestness his reasons for adopting his resolution and his difficulty in keeping it. His "Of course I want to marry, every man does. I always want what I can't have," was pathetically enlightening. And if she had doubted the genuineness of his regard for herself even more seriously than she had done, that "you don't know what it means to me to have a friend like you" of his at parting would have served to drive that doubt from her mind.

Of course he was fond of her, and in the light of that



"Why did this happen to me?"

What Money Cannot Buy

conviction which had been momentarily disturbed by the misrepresentations of the malicious Mrs. Gibbs, and was now fully restored to her, it was easy enough to understand that his apparent lack of good faith toward her on those occasions when he had seemed to give her reason to think he cared more for her than he did, had only been the result of the terrific struggle going on within him between his resolution and his inclination, the temporary weakness of a young man not by nature adamant placed in a hard and peculiar position.

So while Verney was finding comfort in the thought that what had happened was best for Harriet, Harriet was finding comfort in the thought that it was best for Verney. But a resigning thought is not resignation; and though it stayed up her hands and made possible what was otherwise unbearable, nothing, nothing — so weak is human nature, so uncontrolled the passions, so universal the law that we must think of ourselves first,— nothing could stay the tide of grief that engulfed Harriet when Verney had departed, or check her tears as she lay prostrate on the big divan in the library where he had left her.

“Why did this happen to me?” she cried, unable to understand why this blow had fallen upon her, petted heiress that she was, favored of fortune, brought up to think that she was born to the divine right of happiness, “why did this happen to me?”

And it was a long time before the thought “It’s best for Verney” came to comfort her.

CHAPTER XIX

“SO THEY DREW ON TOWARDS THE HOUSE OF THE
INTERPRETER”

VERNEY ELLIS'S resolution to put out of his life all thought of marriage, to the sincerity of which his recent experience with Harriet Rand so emphatically testified, was in a sense an example of the old, old question of a man's choosing between love and ambition, which is as ancient as the history of the world; which Napoleon decided for himself by renouncing Josephine, and Marc Antony by renouncing the Cæsarship of Rome. But the feature that distinguished his case from other cases was the unselfish motive that ruled him in making that choice. Unlike that of the illustrious personages just named, his ambition was not selfish. It must rather be remembered in extenuation of the undeniable fact that he had brought unhappiness into the life of Harriet Rand, that his resolution had not been taken that he might satisfy his own craving for distinction. It had been taken not so much that he might be enabled to see to what an eminence James Vernor Ellis might climb, as to see what James Vernor Ellis could do toward improving political conditions in his country, in so far as his limited field of activity offered him opportunity. His problem was not one of

The House of the Interpreter

choosing between love and a career, but between love of country and love of woman. Not that he would have so described it himself. He did not think he was any more patriotic than the next man, or that he had been in any sense heroic in giving up his chance with Harriet Rand. He had something to accomplish in his life that he thought it was necessary to accomplish; which made it equally necessary that he should not do anything else. That was all there was to it, in his opinion.

The mingled remorse and regret that he felt during the days that followed his memorable understanding with Harriet was not to be compared in degree of suffering with what she felt. Absorbed as he was in working for his friend Ordway's interests and his own in the State campaign, he was able to put the dreadful feeling of loss that had overwhelmed him immediately upon leaving Harriet's presence, almost entirely out of his consciousness.

Not so the girl. She had met the force of the blow which the alignment of her life had sustained when the impossible nature of her attachment for Verney had been made clear to her, with her whole being. The hurt was both mental and physical; and far from being able to put it out of her mind, she could not keep her thoughts from dwelling upon it.

The effort of appearing natural and untroubled, so that her aunt might not surmise that anything had gone wrong, became daily more intolerable, and she longed inexpressibly for solitude and silence and the absence of the necessity for self-control, so that she

The Politician

might let her unhappiness have its way. But although her grief was great in proportion to the fact that it was the first of the kind in her life, it was not so desperate that she had given up hope of rising above it. As plainly as she saw the necessity of adjusting herself to the idea of living without Verney, her good sense told her she would succeed. Change of scene was, however, she realized, an essential to success; and that it should be immediate she thought was more than advisable.

She could not be gone for more than a week, she knew; because a dinner, which Mrs. Ordway was going to give in honor of the nomination for office of her husband and Verney Ellis, required her presence in New York at the end of that time; and no matter how much she might wish to get out of it, the thought that Verney might divine the true reason for her absence if she made some excuse and stayed away determined her not to miss it. She was, besides, a courageous creature, and the duty of being friends with Verney and friends only having been made plain to her, she was not the one to wish to shirk her first meeting with him in that character. The only place in the world where she thought she could find solace for her aching heart was Lake Forest, her beloved home in the country where she had spent her childhood. It was different, of course, from what it was then, for Mrs. Cumloch had only recently substituted the Italian palace that now adorned it in lieu of the spreading old-fashioned house which Harriet's mother had known; but the woods about it were the same, the ravines and drives; and Harriet had grown

The House of the Interpreter

to love its splendid gardens and wonderful velvet lawns, nor had the perfectly appointed house with its rich, luxurious tone ever been anything but pleasing to her.

But it did n't really matter whether she had been accustomed to live in a palace or a hut, that had no part in her longing for a week in Lake Forest. What she wanted was "home," to breathe again the friendly air of the part of the country where she had been born, to feel the prairie breezes of Illinois on her cheek, to look from her window out over the lawn to the tree-filled ravine where she and Pauline Wright and Francis Morton and George Benton had played Indian as children. Yes, she wanted to go home; that was all she wanted, and home she decided to go.

Mrs. Cumloch was very much surprised when Harriet informed her of her plan, and she demurred not a little, although she admitted she had engagements in New York which made it impossible for her to go with her niece — when it became apparent that Harriet intended to go alone.

"It will be only for a week," the girl told her, "and the caretaker and his wife will be there, and Dilly and the stablemen, and I'll bring Maggie" — Maggie was the cook — "out from the town house with me if you say so. Oh, it will be all right, Aunt Lydia, don't worry!"

And the independent young woman even refused to take Rosa with her, the maid who attended both the older lady and the younger one. She did not want, she said, to deprive her aunt of the maid, who had been with

The Politician

her a long time, but in reality she thought the privilege of having her stateroom to herself more than made up for having to button her own shoes.

Harriet completed her arrangements for her trip to Chicago so expeditiously that the afternoon of the day on which she had made up her mind to go found her on board the Twentieth Century Limited, saying good-bye to Mrs. Cumloch, who had come down against the girl's wishes, to see her off. They parted with great apparent tenderness on Harriet's part and a somewhat irritated bewilderment on that of the older lady. She had not been able to get out of her niece any better explanation of her sudden flight, than the assurance that she was homesick for her horse Phantom!

This absurdity, offered in Harriet's gravest, most convincing manner, Mrs. Cumloch received in scornful silence, and with a shrewd guess at the truth she inwardly made up her mind that her niece's sudden determination to have a week by herself in Lake Forest had something to do with that graceless, conscienceless scamp, Verney Ellis! For the Politician was not a favorite with Mrs. Cumloch. She wanted her niece to marry George Benton, and she had feared for some time that the unfortunate infatuation for the young New Yorker was going to make that ambition more unlikely to be realized than ever.

Oh, but it was good to get home! The first sight of the beaconing waters of Lake Michigan, as the Limited swept through the northwest corner of Indiana, filled

The House of the Interpreter

Harriet with joy, and banished for the moment the pain in her heart. She did not stop long in the city, however, but only took time to go up to the house on the Drive to arrange about bringing out the cook, Maggie, to Lake Forest, as she had promised her aunt to do. She did not go to see any of her friends. Lake Forest was her goal, and she could not get there soon enough; and then she was not anxious to have to explain just what had brought her back to Chicago in such a hurry and without Mrs. Cumloch. It was therefore more annoying than pleasant to have Cornelia Presbey drop in to see her before she had been half an hour in the house. She feared just at that time the sharp eyes of Verney's sister, who had guessed long ago, as Harriet was aware she had, the girl's attachment for the Politician. But Cornelia had seen the motor at the door and must needs come in to see "if they had gotten back."

"And you mean to say Mrs. Cumloch's still in New York — you came alone?" she asked, all bright hair and breeziness, when she had embraced Harriet.

"Yes," said Harriet, answering both questions at once, "and I'm going back myself in a few days."

"But why, why did you come?" interrogated the other, her curiosity not at all satisfied. "What is there to bring you home so suddenly and for so short a time?"

Harriet was fond of Mrs. Presbey, but she knew when she considered that curiosity even in a friend had been carried too far.

The Politician

"I came to see about closing the house in the country for the winter," she replied, looking her friend straight in the eyes and with such an expression of calm defiance in her own, that the latter saw she was not to be further questioned.

"Oh," Mrs. Presbey said, hurriedly; "of course!" and launched into a voluble account of all she had been doing herself since Harriet had left. That topic exhausted, she told Harriet that if there was anything she could do for her, to help, she would love to do it, and took her departure — only to tell her husband that evening when he came home, that Harriet was in love with Verney and that Verney had declined to be in love with her, and that Harriet had run away to Chicago to hide the first pangs of her broken heart.

"Do you really think so?" asked Lawrence Presbey, more to get further details of the affair out of his wife than because he doubted her judgment. He had learned in the course of ten years of married life to rely implicitly upon Cornelia's intuitions.

"I know so," said his wife positively; and then, with scorn, "it's just like Verney to miss a chance like that!"

And Lawrence Presbey, divining that Harriet's fortune was the "chance" referred to, gave a noncommittal "um-um!" in reply, deprecating in true masculine fashion, not the mercenary sentiment, but such frank expression of it.

When Harriet reached Lake Forest at last, and caught sight of the familiar countenance and substantial form

The House of the Interpreter

of her aunt's coachman waiting to welcome her as she stepped off the train, her lip trembled, she was so glad! She had expected him to meet her, of course, for she had telegraphed, but it was so good really to see him!

It was her meeting with Dilly, however, the faithful handmaiden — if a woman of Dilly's mature years may be termed a maiden — who had sewed for Harriet since her young girlhood, that caused the complete destruction of the girl's self-control that had ruled her so long; for except for that first outburst when Verney had left her the fateful day of her enlightenment, she had not once given way to tears.

"What ever made you come back all on a sudden without your aunt this way, Miss Harrie?" enquired Dilly of the prunes and prisms mouth and crinkly eyes, as she came out to greet Harriet when the runabout had stopped under the *porte cochère*. Her uncompromising knob of gray hair at the back of her head, her big-bowed spectacles and dumpy figure, did not make the little New England woman anything but homely, but to Miss Rand she was as beautiful as an angel.

"O Dilly, I've come home!" she cried in a thrilling voice, and burst into tears.

The period of readjustment was not a long one for Harriet. After all, her attachment for Verney had been quickly formed and had been of short duration, and it was not remarkable that the process of bringing herself back step by step to the feeling of friendly admiration and regard she had first entertained for him should be as speedy. Having come such a little distance on the

The Politician

road to love she had not far to go back, now that she was obliged to retrace her steps. And perhaps this was all the more possible because her feeling for Verney had partaken so largely of hero-worship, which as a sentiment often reaches as great heights as love, but is more easily conquered. It is not to be denied, however, that it was fortunate she was able to turn back when she did, before her feeling, whatever it was, had grown too strong to be uprooted.

Her first day at Lake Forest was one that Harriet never forgot, it was so supremely wretched. She had arrived in the morning and had taken to her bed, where the tears which she had denied so long, and of which those she had shed on Dilly's shoulder were only the advance guard, held sway. With wild sobs she told herself that she wished she were dead, that she should never get over it, and promised herself a hundred times that she would go to Verney the minute she got back to New York and tell him she loved him, and that he could neglect her all he liked and spend all his time on politics if only he would marry her.

A girl of less character would undoubtedly have followed this course long ago. Unable to accept her unhappiness without protest, such a girl would have gone to the young man at once, thrown herself in his arms, and besought his compassion in the hope that she could by such means force him to abandon his principles and give way to his love for her. But Harriet Rand was neither so foolish nor so weak. That was something Mrs. Gibbs might do, but not she. Stress of emotion

The House of the Interpreter

might suggest the idea, but pride and good sense would prevent her from any real attempt to carry it out.

The next day brought her a visit from her friend Pauline Wright, very much surprised to learn by chance, through Dilly, that Harriet was home.

"Why did n't you let me know, Harrie?" she said, gently reproachful; "Dilly says you got so tired out having a good time in New York that you had to come home and get rested, but I don't see that that's any reason for not seeing me."

She removed the faded summer hat she wore from her waving ash-brown hair, carefully sticking the hat pins through it, and sat down on the foot of Harriet's bed.

"It is n't any reason," Harriet said, wondering meanwhile if she should tell Polly.

"What have you been doing with yourself while I've been away?" she asked, deciding that she would n't tell just then. "Let me see, how long is that?"

"You went to New York the last week in June. About three months, Harrie."

Harriet's sigh was like a burning breeze on a desert isle.

"It seems much longer. But what's the news? Anything?"

"Nothing much. Francis—" that was the young man whose views on politics had clashed with Verney's on the occasion of Mrs. Cumloch's dinner after the Convention—"has gone away. On a trip with his father."

She paused.

"And George Benton? Is he here?" asked Harriet,

The Politician

surprised at herself for asking. She had not expected from her broken heart that much interest in a man again.

"Yes, I saw him the other evening." A delicate pink crept into Pauline's fair cheek.

But Harriet was too occupied with her own thoughts to notice it.

"He is a nice boy," she said musingly, as if some one had been arguing the point with her.

"I think so," assented the other softly, and then with the confidential archness that their long intimacy warranted, "how 's Mr. Ellis?"

The tears, never far away just then, rushed to Harriet's eyes. Self pity welled up in their brown depths and she turned her face in toward the pillow.

"Don't ask me!" she said. "Oh, Polly, I'm so miserable!"

For a moment an expression that might have been concern but which seemed more like consternation, passed over Pauline's face, then it was all tenderness.

"You poor dear," she said; "tell me all about it!"

And Harriet telling her, found that the luxury of woe was incomplete without the ear of sympathy; and when she had finished a broken account of her little ill-fated love story, she clasped her friend around the neck and sobbing cried, "O Polly, Polly! Why did it happen to me!"

The role of comforter was the one most suited to Pauline Wright's character, whose heart was all compassion, and whose voice was made to soothe. All the afternoon she sat with Harriet, ministering to her

The House of the Interpreter

grief with wise word and tender caress; and when she had brought her to a less tragic mood, kissed her gently, promising to come again. Then she went back through the grounds of the big house, across the ravine, over some fields to the little house where she lived. It was a familiar walk — she and Harriet had traversed it many times going back and forth to see each other, and she had always loved it; but that evening it seemed to have lost its familiar look and its loveliness. There was no longer to her any beauty or gladness in the world. “If only Verney Ellis had cared for her,” Pauline thought — “perhaps — perhaps —”

She had kept her lamp trimmed a long, long time; but now, it seemed, it had been in vain.

Harriet took life very easily those days at Lake Forest. Profound exhaustion was her dominant physical sensation; she slept late in the mornings and often did not rise immediately when she awakened. She would lie in bed looking out through the flowered chintz hangings of her windows on the artificial pool fringed with barberry and late blooming plants on the lawn below, and think and think. Slowly, very slowly, she was coming to the conclusion that meant peace if once definitely arrived at — that perhaps, after all, life with Verney Ellis might not mean happiness; that to marry a man whose whole heart was in an outside interest, who was one-ideaed on any subject as Verney was about politics, might even mean unhappiness. And always when she had reached that point in her meditations the face of Agnes Ordway, wife of the Republican candi-

The Politician

date for Governor of New York, would come before her mental vision with its beautiful sad mouth, and sad beautiful eyes; and while it brooded over her the lips seemed to repeat what Mrs. Ordway said to Harriet that afternoon at Mrs. de Albert's tea, "Don't marry a politician if you want to help."

Harriet wondered at the time what the young married woman meant when she gave that warning; now, in the light of her own experience, her own knowledge, she understood. Mrs. Ordway had divined her deep interest in Verney and had been prompted to speak the cryptic sentence from a hope that she might prevent her from suffering the same lonely fate that she herself had suffered, that of marrying a man whose work, not his wife, is his passion, and whose interest in that work keeps him most of the time away from home. The girl smiled sadly to herself as she remembered the intense feeling with which Mrs. Ordway that same afternoon had declared that she relied upon her art to fill her time, and how puzzled she herself had been to account for that intensity. It was all clear enough now; that pathetic something she had noticed about Agnes Ordway's expression when they first met, but which she had not understood, was loneliness.

So Harriet thought and slept, and slept and thought; and rest "knit up the ravelled sleeve of care" by night; and the face of Agnes Ordway helped her through the day, and with every hour her healing grew more pronounced. Silence and solitude and a sense of her

The House of the Interpreter

remoteness from the scene of her hurt had their way with her; and Maggie made her delicious things to eat and brought up her breakfast in the morning; and Dilly, the ever faithful, brushed out her long beautiful hair for her at night until she felt sleepy, and told her quaint stories, in the dry, satirical way that was such a surprising contrast to her commonplace, homely personality, about her girlhood in New England. Harriet would begin by smiling just to please Dilly, and end by laughing heartily because she could n't help it.

When she had finally closed the door upon her young mistress, Dilly would go downstairs and find Maggie, and the two faithful old souls over a late cup of tea would unite in anathematizing "the black-hearted villain"—Maggie's words—who had brought such unhappiness into their darling's life. For it had not taken either the kind-hearted old Irishwoman or the shrewd New Englander long to decide that as the beginning and end of all trouble was Man, a man had been the cause of Harriet's present state of depression, and that their idol was suffering from "a disappointment in love."

On the fourth day of her self-inflicted retirement Harriet's splendid health came to the rescue, and she found to her surprise that she had a great deal more energy and ambition than she had ever thought to have again. It was three o'clock of a crisp October day. There had been a hard frost over night, and the skies above and the earth beneath were iron-bound. Harriet was not up; she had not yet felt the need of aris-

The Politician

ing, or that there was anything to arise for. But that afternoon somehow it was different. A sudden revolution of feeling came over her. Thinking became a burden to her, inaction hateful, and lying in bed a shameful thing. She became aware that a tide of healthy blood was coursing through her veins, no matter how sick her mind might be, and as she looked eagerly out upon the day, she knew on the instant that the thing she wanted most in the world was to be on a horse again.

She rang for Dilly, a passion of energy in the pressure of her fingers on the white-enamelled button in the wall.

“Dilly,” she said, when the handmaiden arrived in haste — and her voice had the ring of new bells — “draw me the coldest bath you ever saw, find me some riding things, and tell some one to saddle Phantom and have him at the door in half an hour.”

Dilly stood astonished at this command, at the fire of tone and look, but her protests that it was too raw a day, that the roads were icy and her pet not well enough for such violent exercise, were utterly disregarded by the “pet.” Harriet was usually expeditious in getting dressed, but to-day she surpassed herself. Her cold plunge was the matter of a minute, and she was braiding her heavy hair, doubling and tying it, when Dilly returned from a trip to the camphor closet with her riding things.

The girl laughed as the little dumpy woman entered, her arms full of black cloth habit, riding boots jammed

The House of the Interpreter

under her chin, and a derby hat at a rakish angle on her old gray head.

"If you could see how you looked, Dilly! Like a regular old sport!" she cried.

Dilly smiled as if complimented.

"It was the only way I could get them all down to oncet," she said.

She and Maggie watched Harriet ride off, a slim dark figure with a peach-blow china chin that made a dazzling linen stock beneath it less dazzling — on a slim dark horse.

"Is n't she the brave gurr!" said Maggie to Dilly, her huge mouth wide with admiration.

"Her heart's begun to mend," said Dilly to Maggie; "you can see that without looking!" And both nodded their heads wisely.

It was by no means a perfect day for riding. The sky hugged the earth except for a bright streak that circled the horizon like light under the edge of a circus tent, and a turbulent wind, resenting its despotic compass, hurried about as if striving to find a place of escape. But unpleasant as it was, the day held no threat for Harriet. She was glad, on the contrary, to find it so aggressive, and she told Phantom in an exuberant, satisfied voice that she loved "weather." The sense of exerting her will again, if it were only in resisting the influence of an unpropitious day, was a tonic to her, and the sense of freedom from the tyranny of the mind to which she had been so much a slave of late made her spirit soar.

The Politician

She lifted the tall hunter into a gallop, heading him west over the lowland lying directly behind her home; Phantom responding, took the road into his confidence, promised to stay by it as a true horse should, patted it, played with it, teased it prettily, and then with fine faithlessness, spurned it utterly, and barely touching it with his proud feet, advanced in a series of great bounds that proved his natural element the air, and all winged things his kin. Harriet's delight in the motion was keener than it had ever been before. Turning in her saddle, she waved a defiant farewell to dull care, nor did she draw rein until the big veins on Phantom's neck had begun to stand out like a bas-relief map, and the good sweat had metamorphosed his dark skin into glistening black satin.

She had ridden two or three miles when she turned south on a road with which she was not familiar. On both sides of it lay a flat expanse of low land, treeless and fenceless and covered with short yellow grass that was almost dead. To her left at the roadside where enormous straw-stacks stood sheltered by some trees, a wagon track led out into this open land, used doubtless by the farmers to get in hay. The prospect of a gallop across country appealed to the girl on horseback as she surveyed the level, grass-covered expanse, as an attractive substitute for the trammelled pleasures of the road, and she turned Phantom eagerly into the wagon track.

It had been a very rainy October in Lake Forest, although of this Harriet was unaware, but the night's frost had hardened and the wind had dried it to such

The House of the Interpreter

an extent that she did not at first discover its real condition, and did not hesitate to ride at a brisk canter. Much to her disappointment, however, it grew softer and softer as she proceeded, until she was presently obliged to slow down to a walk and pick her way rather carefully; and before many minutes had passed patches of water appeared here and there, the tops of the grass just showing through them.

She began to see that her cross-country ride was not going to be so pleasant as she had thought, and that instead of the springy turf she had hoped to find she was encountering muddy bottomland. She wondered if she had not better turn back; but on looking behind her she realized that it would be just about as far to retrace her steps as to go on until she reached a line of trees some distance away, which she felt sure fringed the edge of another road running parallel to the one she had left; and then, too, it seemed so ignominious to go back, so much more like giving up. Miss Rand was constitutionally averse to giving up. She kept on hoping that the ground would improve. Instead of improving, however, it treacherously and ruthlessly proceeded to belie her faith in it and grew, with each step the snorting Phantom took, softer and blacker.

A thin glaze of ice developed the trying habit of appearing on certain boggy holes and of concealing their depth, and the patches of water grew more and more frequent. Phantom didn't like it at all, and showed his dislike by blowing apprehensively through his nostrils and lifting his feet with deliberate caution.

The Politician

He was a dainty beast and jealous of his white pasterns and black oiled hoofs. His rider had much ado to get him along, and it was only by keeping up the constant iteration of a cheery "Come, boy, come!" that she managed to keep him moving. She knew he had a child's faith in the sound of her voice. But in spite of the increasing difficulty of proceeding she still thought it was foolish to go back. The trees were so much nearer now, she felt confident she would soon reach the other road.

In this expectation, however, she was shortly disappointed, for thirty yards or so from the trees, further progress was impeded by a swath of black mud so wide and so threatening in aspect that Harriet dared not cross it. She looked back rather desperately, for the thought of retracing her steps now, all that long weary way that she had won with such effort, made her heart sink. The road she had left seemed very far away indeed. She could only tell where it was by the haystacks she had thought so large then, and which now seemed like so many thimbles. With her head turned over her shoulder she sat as motionless as the pillar of salt into which Lot's inquisitive spouse was turned, and longed with all her heart to be back on that fair highway that she had deserted in her pride. How foolish she had been! If only she had known how faithless the new love was going to prove, she would never have forsaken the old with such recklessness.

Wishing could not remedy her rashness, however, and sighing she withdrew her gaze from the coveted

The House of the Interpreter

haystacks and began following the swath of mud in the hope of finding a place to cross. She was a long time finding it, but the stretch of mud dwindled presently into a succession of spots, and at length she was able to pick her way over it in safety.

The patch of ground between her and the row of willow trees was traversed as quickly as its spongy condition would permit, and Harriet eagerly surmounted the bank on which the trees stood only to find on the other side instead of a road, a ditch of water some six feet wide and Heaven only knew how deep. The disappointment was a terrible one. It was getting so late and she was so tired of mud and water and of her horse's uncertain steps, and she had counted so on finding a road! Must she go back, after all?

She looked behind her again and shivered. Mist had begun to roll up over the bottomland and she could not see her lighthouse — the haystacks — any more, and she realized with a sense of shock, that she had n't any idea in which direction lay the road! The late sun lit with its frosty gleam so much level, water-covered land, it was all so much alike, she could n't remember at what point she had entered upon it. Absurd as it seemed, she was lost within a mile of a public highway, within five miles of her own home, on a stretch of boggy pastureland where nobody doubtless had ever been lost before.

Trying to ignore the panic that was beginning to rise in her heart, she walked her horse slowly down stream in an attempt to find a better place to cross, his

The Politician

hoofs crashing through thin ice into unsuspected holes at every step. Ugly clouds, gliding one after another, Indian file, effaced the sun. A large white bird, with black tips to his wings, of a species unknown to Harriet, flying very near the ground, executed a number of difficult manœuvres, with the conscious grace of an accomplished skater cutting figure-eights, and settled at last on a mound of earth not far from her. It lent the last touch to Harriet's sense of the unreality of it all, and she felt that if she cried out suddenly she would wake and find it only a nightmare. If she had been lost "miles from any human habitation" as good Sir Walter would say, "on a Scottish moor, with night coming on," instead of at about six o'clock of an afternoon in a stretch of open country that could not have exceeded in dimensions two miles square, she could not have felt more bewildered.

A narrower part of the stream, however, she did at length discover, and she and Phantom faced it desperately. On the other side of it, directly in front of them, another expanse of watery waste extended, but over to the right the ground was much higher, and she saw farm lands reclaimed from the marshes by delightful looking fences, with a grove of trees in the immediate foreground and in the distance, oh, rapturous sight! the gray roofs of farm buildings. People were over there, nice, safe, good people, who would love to comfort her and do things for her if only she could get to them!

She would get to them, and very quickly, for she was

The House of the Interpreter

very tired and wanted to rest. But first that stream must be crossed. She rather dreaded the cold water, but it could n't be very deep she thought, just a ditch, though a thin coating of ice on top of it completely disguised its real depth.

"In we go, Phantom dear," she said; and the thoroughbred obediently plunged into the water.

To Harriet's consternation it proved much deeper than she had expected, for it came as high as the saddle, and what was worse, there seemed to be at least three feet of mud beneath it. Phantom strove gallantly to pull himself and his rider through it and out on the other side, but he only seemed to sink deeper with every plunge. The water came sloughing up into the girl's lap now and she began to think she had better climb off the horse's back and give him a chance to extricate himself unimpeded by her weight.

She did not much fancy struggling through three feet of mud and water in her soaked riding-skirt, even though she knew it was not deep enough to drown her; but it began to seem expedient, for Phantom in his efforts to get out of the ditch had only succeeded in miring himself more thoroughly than ever. It was a dismal plight to be in, but help was close at hand.

In a paddock just the other side of the clump of trees that effectually screened it from sight, was a small training-ring, around which a man in riding things had been driving a young horse, when he suddenly discovered from the vantage point of his seat in the sulky, the unfortunate predicament of the horse and rider who,

The Politician

his groom had told him, had been wandering about on the muddy marshland for the last half-hour. He lost no time in going to the rescue — more especially since he realized as he ran that the luckless rider was a woman.

“Hang on, I’m coming,” he shouted, as he saw her make a movement to dismount, and when he had reached the spot, “Harrie!” he cried, “by all that’s wonderful!”

At any other time if she had been her sane, sensible self and not somewhat unnerved by her rather trying experience, she would have been very much surprised to perceive that her rescuer was George Benton, and would have wondered much how he happened to be in that out-of-the-way spot just then, but it did not occur to Harriet at the moment that it was at all extraordinary. It only seemed a part of her strange adventure and quite in keeping with its dreamlike aspect, to find his familiar face — red from anxiety and running, the eye-glasses pushed awry — gazing at her in astonishment from the top of the bank she and Phantom had failed to surmount.

But he did not waste many seconds in wondering how she got there and where she came from.

“Hold on!” he reiterated, and sliding down the bank, waded into the water up to the top of his puttees and placed a firm hand on Phantom’s bit, who instantly ceased plunging.

Benton’s touch and voice always had upon horses the effect of inspiring confidence, and the animal, with his help, was very soon able to scramble out of the ditch.

The House of the Interpreter

"Thanks," said Harriet politely, much as if he had given her his arm over a crossing. She was not ungrateful, but very tired, and he was too intent on getting her back to solid ground to notice what she said. When they reached the roadway where stood the sulky which he had left so hurriedly, with the groom at the horse's head, he lifted the girl, whose exhaustion had not escaped him, without ceremony from the saddle and into the trap, and then got in himself.

"Take Miss Rand's horse to the stable as quick as you can, and see that he gets a thorough rub-down and a feed," he said to the man. Then he drove rapidly off in the direction of the gray roofs Harriet had noticed and yearned for from the other side of the ditch, and which she now knew belonged to Benton's stock farm. That she had not recognized it before was owing to her novel and unusual method of approaching it.

The drive up through the pastures to Benton's handsome brick residence, artistically modelled on the farmhouse style as to exterior, but thoroughly modern and luxurious as to interior, did not take five minutes, and by the time they reached its wide white, brass-knocked door and hospitable front porch, Harriet had explained to him how it was that the necessity of closing the house in Lake Forest for the winter had brought her West for a week (the man was too accustomed to taking her word for gospel to consider this excuse insufficient), and how a thoughtless fancy for a cross-country gallop had brought her to the uncom-

The Politician

fortable, if ridiculous, plight from which he had so opportunely rescued her. And he had explained in his turn how it was that he had chanced to see horse and rider struggling in the ditch, and his surprise when he had discovered who the rider was.

Upon entering the house, Benton's housekeeper and distant cousin, Mrs. Pratt, took charge of Harriet and helped her to remove her wet riding-skirt and splashed coat before a fire in an upstairs room. The good lady was very kind and urged the loan of a black silk dress upon her guest, until her own things should have dried; but the girl declined the offer, declaring that her boots would muddy it, and that a long coat of some sort over her riding-breeches and linen waist was all she needed. Whereupon a covert driving-coat belonging to the master of the house was produced, which covered Harriet almost to her heels, and in which she clattered joyously downstairs to the dining-room where Benton and a supper which the young man had ordered made ready at once, awaited her. All her old spirits had returned to her by this time. The anxiety incident to her adventure was forgotten, and she was gloriously hungry.

"I know you're having dinner early just on my account," she said, as they sat down, flashing an appreciative glance at her host, "but I'm glad of it; I'm simply starved!"

"Not so very. I have it early myself in the country. And it is n't dinner, it's supper. I'm very much of a farmer, you know."

The House of the Interpreter

He smiled happily as he spoke. It was too wonderful to be true that Harriet should be sitting opposite him at his own table, even if old Mrs. Pratt was there too, when only a little while ago he had thought her far away in New York. In his satisfaction over this miraculous fact he failed to see anything out of the way about her costume, though the covert coat was so big for her that she had to turn back the sleeves, and it trailed on the floor when she sat down.

“Is n’t it becoming?” she asked, inferring from his prolonged scrutiny that it was the coat that had caught his attention.

“What?” he asked, innocent of any other motive for his gazing than a desire to feast upon the sight of her; and understanding this suddenly, she laughed pleasedly.

She was enjoying the whole thing exceedingly, the old-fashioned dining-room — painstakingly old-fashioned, with the very best old-fashionedness that money could buy, beamed ceiling, mullioned windows, china cupboards and all, that its owner had had copied from an old New England farmhouse,—the unshaded candles on the dark shining surface of the table, the delicious cold chicken, tender salad, and hot tea, and the aged domestic whose partiality for her master was so great that she insisted upon passing everything to him first, causing that gentleman such embarrassment.

As for Benton himself, her heart had never been so warm toward him. Had n’t he as much as saved her life? And dear me, how good everything tasted!

The Politician

She only hoped, and expressed as much to the other two at the table, that Phantom was enjoying his oats as much as she enjoyed her supper. What was the aged domestic bringing in now?

She turned around in her chair with a childish eagerness which Benton — with whom she had always been at her gravest and most dignified — had never seen her display before, and thought utterly fascinating.

“Honey!” she cried, gazing with rapture at the crystal bowl of golden translucence that was passed to her. “Hot biscuits and honey! O Georgie, what a nice boy you are!”

“It’s from my own apiaries,” he said, flushing with pleasure at her pleasure; “I knew you liked it!”

After supper Harriet donned her skirt and coat, now quite dry and beautifully brushed, and Benton drove her home in a runabout. The distance between their homes was quite five miles by the road, but somehow on this occasion, and this had not always been the case on similar ones, it seemed as short to Harriet as to him.

That evening as she made ready for bed, rather early, for the day’s events had tired her, she regaled Dilly, who was assisting in the ceremony, with an account of her adventure, between little bursts of song.

But Dilly, who was by nature a pessimist, and proud of it, though she acknowledged her delight that so much of her pet’s old spirit had seemed to return, was not at all certain that the advent of George Ben-

The House of the Interpreter

ton as a factor in Harriet's recovery of it, was to be regarded with any confidence.

"That's all very well, but just the same, Miss Harrie, I hope you're not going to be foolish enough to trust a man again! I wouldn't trust one" — if she had been a French marquise who had dealt with countless lovers in her time, this funny dumpy little woman with the pursed mouth and tight-screwed hair could hardly have spoken with an air of more experience — "around the corner as long as he was able to sit up and blow a feather off the table!"

But Harriet's surprising answer to this bit of uncompromising scepticism was a joyous laugh. In the young, not time but perfect health is the most potent quantity in the healing of a broken heart.

After that they rode every day of the remainder of the week, she and George Benton, and the amount of time she devoted to meditating upon her disappointment, and to arguing herself out of the idea that her life without Verney Ellis was going to mean nothing but unhappiness for her, grew less and less.

On the last day of her stay in Lake Forest, as they were riding together for the last time before her departure for New York that afternoon, George Benton, as was quite proper and fitting, asked her again if she would n't marry him. He had not asked her before, fearing to end those precious days with her prematurely, as her refusal of him must have done. They were riding up the beautiful winding drive that

The Politician

approached Mrs. Cumloch's country house through the park she had had laid out.

"Could n't you possibly think of it?" he said. "I'm a lazy, good-for-nothing fellow, I know, with nothing to interest myself in but my horses, but I'd try awfully hard to make you happy."

He reached over and closed his right hand over one of hers, reins and all.

She turned the deep gaze of the Madonna eyes he worshipped upon him, soberly, consideringly, silently. She thought he had never come so near being handsome, with the flush of honest feeling in his face, the faithful eyes dim behind their glasses, and his broad-shouldered, thin figure that never looked so well as in the saddle.

"I love you so very much!" he said, when he had waited a moment for her reply.

Ah! That was what she had wanted to hear, and he had nearly made the mistake of not telling her, in his fear that she had heard it so often she would not care to hear it again.

Her delicate skin took on a deeper bloom. Her spirit answered gratefully to that simple statement, warmed to it, and clung to it. Certainly it was a wonderful thing to be loved, and by a man she thought as much of as she did of the one who was pleading with her now.

There was, too, a new masterfulness about his pleading that she liked, that had never been there before though he had asked her that question a great many

The House of the Interpreter

times, and that was the result of the something new that had characterized their intimacy of the past few days, of that atmosphere of hope which had been cast about those delightful hours together which had been granted George Benton, he knew, by special dispensation of Providence! It is a well-known fact that the man who asks knowing that he has a chance, is a different creature from the man who asks knowing he has none. There is a ring and a way about the first that goes far toward getting him what he wants. At least it had that effect now, in Benton's case.

Harriet turned her fingers under the possessive hand that covered hers, and clasped his rather tightly.

"You've asked me that a great many times, George," she said, "and I've said 'No' a great many times. But now — but now —"

She took her hand from him and regarded him with a touching expression of confidence, of affection, and of shy gladness.

"Although I can't say 'yes,' I won't" — very slowly — "say 'no.'"

Touching her horse with her spur, she rode off at a gallop toward the house, leaving behind her an incredulous, much amazed man with a hope in his heart that he would not have exchanged for any certainty in the world — except one.

CHAPTER XX

VERNEY LOSES HIS TEMPER

MEANWHILE the Republican State Campaign, which was Verney's especial care and chief interest, was becoming with each day more engrossing. As a stone that is sent rolling down a hill increases its momentum with every turn, so the campaign gathered impetus as it neared election day.

The papers had more and more to say about the Republican candidate for Governor, one day picturing him addressing a village audience in "characteristic attitude," and the next devoting a column to a review of his political career, under some such heading as "prominent in politics at thirty-four." And with him the Republican candidate for Attorney-general was often named.

Even in the last week the Democratic candidate for Governor had lost his old position as a five to four favorite. Everywhere Ordway money had become more abundant and aggressive. In the Wall Street district it was nine to ten on the curb, and on the Stock Exchange it was being offered at nine to ten without takers. The odds on the young candidate were lengthening all the time, as his sane, practical policies were unfolded in his speeches and his unrevolutionary atti-

Verney Loses His Temper

tude was made clear toward such questions as direct primaries and public service commissions.

To the former he was opposed, characterizing the system of direct nomination as an experiment which appeared to contain evils as great as those of the present system. While he acknowledged that the purpose of the direct nomination plan was commendable, to give members of the party at large a greater share in the choice of the party's nominees and to put an end to corrupt boss domination, he maintained that it had not worked out that way in other States where it had been in use. It had resulted in increasing the power of money in politics, he said, by making necessary the expenditure of large sums at the primaries, and had doubled the labor of election to office by necessitating two campaigns instead of one; and in this connection — since it is true the man must seek the office, not the office the man — it had acted as a deterrent to the entry of the best men into public life. He said too that he could not endorse the system because he regarded it as an obstacle to organization, inasmuch as the party would find it difficult to act under it for the purpose of fusion with other parties, or for the suitable distribution of offices among localities or groups in the party. Also, with direct primaries there was the possibility, as had been proved in other States, of nominations being made by a minority of the party, while he himself believed in the convention system of nominating in which the majority ruled and where representation was by delegates. As for abuses in party

The Politician

management, the existence of which he did not deny, he was convinced they could be corrected.

He was opposed also to the public service commissions as a means of regulating public affairs, and on the ground that their continued and indiscriminate use would result in a government by commissions instead of by the officers elected under the Constitution. He was quoted as saying, however, that he believed a certain amount of regulation was necessary, and that if he should come into office he would recommend to the Legislature the retention of the commission system inaugurated by the preceding Governor for some time longer, in order to give it every chance of proving its efficiency in that respect, although he would at the same time endeavor to limit the commissions so as to render them less expensive and more quick to act.

Ordway announced himself in short as being for less legislation on new and untried lines, and less interference with personal and economic liberty; and these doctrines (which were identical with those Verney favored and which constituted his reason, apart from personal friendship, for desiring Ordway's election) the young candidate was endeavoring to disseminate throughout the State and in Manhattan. As they struck the keynote of the temperate and neutral mass of voters who form a class between the two extremes of the reformers and the indifferent, he was winning to himself many adherents. Speaking in opera houses, townhalls, and often from the end of a railroad car, he had travelled from one town to another, spreading

Verney Loses His Temper

the gospel of Republicanism as he saw it, and meeting everywhere with an enthusiastic reception.

A ten-o'clock meeting at Fredonia filled the opera house to overflowing, and hundreds were unable to get in. At Oswego he was met by a company of militia, from which place he went by automobile to the mills across the river, where he made a brief out-of-doors address to hundreds of the operatives. At Syracuse, although he did not speak, he kept open house in the car and shook hands with a great number of people. Practically the whole town of Batavia, where he gave a five-minute talk from the platform, turned out to greet him; and at Dunkirk, when his train pulled into the depot one night at about eight o'clock, he found a typical election-time throng of people filling the streets, cheering and burning red fire.

On some of these occasions, Verney, who accompanied Ordway on his campaign tour, was the principal speaker; but during the three days which the candidate for Governor had reserved for campaigning in Manhattan, the young men worked separately, addressing independent audiences. The Politician was confident of success, at least, of his friend's success.

"Of course we'll win," he told Ordway confidently one day. "The national ticket and the State ticket are sure to be victorious. The head of each, at least, I mean," he added, smiling at the other. "Wall Street shows plainly enough which way the wind is blowing; stocks are holding firm, and people aren't a bit excited, just waiting, that's all."

The Politician

And indications seemed to justify his optimism. A triple canvass of the same districts by different persons had been made by an enterprising voting league, and from the result of this poll it seemed that Ordway would have only from seven to eight votes on the average of each election District behind the Republican Presidential candidate. It looked as if he would be elected Governor of New York State by a large majority, and that his total vote would not be likely to fall behind the head of the ticket to a greater extent than forty thousand votes.

As for the less important contest between Verney and Billy Vandewater for Attorney-general, the chances of each candidate seemed more nearly equal. The respective status of each had been clearly defined in the public mind at the beginning of the campaign by the sobriquets which had been given each by his enemies. Vandewater's good family, good looks, and good money, together with his generally well-dressed appearance and his habit of riding to all political meetings in a large 60-horse-power motor car, had earned for him that of "the silk-stocking candidate"; and Verney, in spite of his good family, and on account of his well-known position of influence in the Republican party machine (he had been executive member of his District for a long time), had become generally known as "The Politician," — the same name by which in derision Mrs. Presbey and others of his family who were not in sympathy with his political aspirations were accustomed

Verney Loses His Temper

to call him, and by which he was known to Harriet Rand's tenderest and most admiring thoughts.

Yet each candidate had as many friends as enemies among the voting public who adhered neither to one party nor to the other; for while there were large numbers of persons who were irked by the Democratic candidate's habitually immaculate appearance, his chauffeur, and the air of condescension which was as much a part of him as his dissipated eyes, there were a great many who gloried in that very condescension and boasted that "our candidate belongs to one of New York's oldest families." Some human beings seem naturally to thrive on boot-licking, and among these Vandewater found ardent supporters.

There were also a great number of people who thought Verney's knowledge of affairs, his practical acquaintance with politics, an advantage rather than a detriment in the matter of his proving an efficient Attorney-general. They thought a man who was familiar with the operation of the voting system on election days would be better able to prosecute cases having to do with illegal voting,—and an Attorney-general would almost certainly have to face cases of that kind during his term of office,—than a man who was n't.

Unfortunately, however, so far as Verney's success in the campaign was concerned, in elections the voters who really stop to consider the merits and demerits of a candidate are in the minority; and the voters who hurrah for the man who seems the most popular, who

The Politician

talks the loudest and sets up the most drinks are in the majority. On the same principle that a man at a ball goes up to ask for a dance to the girl who is already surrounded by men instead of to the one who is not. Half the time he does n't really think she's so much more attractive than her less fortunate sister, but he goes because the other men are there, and he wants to be in the swim.

"Entertaining" was certainly Vandewater's long suit. He had unlimited private means, so that his activities were not at all restricted by the meagre sums appropriated by his party for his campaign expenses. Halfway through the campaign it was his boast that he had dined or lunched with every "boss" of any account in New York City, and this had kept him a great deal busier than in expounding the principles of Democracy.

Yet, too, it was generally conceded he made a good speech. If he did n't succeed in proving the superiority of his party over the other, or in showing cause why he should be elected rather than his rival, he did succeed, chiefly on account of the facility with which he kept an audience amused, in drawing large crowds to hear him speak, and establishing a wide personal popularity. And personal popularity is oftentimes all that is required to elect a man.

This Verney knew very well, and he was too good a politician not to understand how great an appeal Vandewater's free-handed generosity and his trick of being amusing made to the popular mind. That was

Verney Loses His Temper

what made him so anxious about the result of the contest,—because he was himself terribly handicapped in the first respect by the shortness of his campaign funds, and in the second by his own limitations as a speaker. It was true, as he was quite aware, that his very earnestness prevented him from making his speeches as entertaining as his rival's. He had so much to say, it took so much time to tell the people what he thought they came to hear, what his party was able to do for them, and in what manner their candidate for Governor and he himself intended to serve them if they had the chance, that he could n't find time to drag in stories for the sole purpose of getting a laugh. This is not to say that he never told them, but that he did so only when they served to illustrate a point and were not irrelevant. For while he believed devoutly in the importance of employing the right kind of method to gain attention for what he said, he believed even more devoutly in the importance of having something worth while to say, and of saying it.

It was on the first night of the three days which Verney had planned to devote exclusively to speech-making in New York, that he found he had to address the largest gathering he had faced since the beginning of the campaign.

The meeting was held in one of the down-town theatres and every possible device to attract a crowd having been employed by the party managers, including fireworks from the roof of the building, three blocks of red fire outside and a brass band at the door,

The Politician

it was packed to suffocation. Ellis, seated on the platform with a large representation of the political intellects of the city headed by a political club, looked about with satisfaction at the well-filled house, the rows of G. A. R. men in front, the crowded galleries, and the women in the stage boxes. He was n't fond of speaking, and he had a poor opinion of his powers in that line, but he was grateful for the sake of the party he represented that the seats were all taken.

The president of the political club had just risen for the purpose of introducing the candidate for Attorney-general as the principal speaker of the evening, when the young man's eye caught sight of three late arrivals entering the box directly to the left of the stage and taking possession of the remaining seats in it. They were Mrs. Cumloch, Miss Rand, and George Benton.

Verney smiled faintly. He was glad Harriet had come. They had not seen each other since Mrs. Ordway's dinner party the day after Harriet's return from her week in Chicago, which Verney understood had to do with the necessity of closing the house in Lake Forest for the winter. On that occasion they sat side by side at the table and talked to each other as freely and laughed as gayly as if they had never in their lives known an unhappy moment together, as if the golden thread of their feeling for each other had never been abruptly broken, as if the voice of fate — which was in Verney's case the voice of ambition whether unselfish or not — had not said to them "Stop! Thus far

Verney Loses His Temper

and no farther. Hereafter your ways must be separate ways."

As for George Benton's presence in the box, it was easily explained. He was a man of quick action when once aroused, and acting at once on the hope Harriet had held out to him when they parted in Lake Forest, he had followed her to New York on the next train. His sudden arrival had greatly surprised Mrs. Cumloch, who was unable to keep herself from building all sorts of air castles on the strength of it. She did not quite dare, however, to question her niece, and the less so as Harriet seemed to take Benton's arrival as a matter of course. The week following had seen the young man from Chicago in the role of the most devoted of suitors, walking on the Avenue with Miss Rand, motoring with her, and going with her to the theatre, though in the latter case Mrs. Cumloch invariably made one of the party.

News of this devotion of his had been brought to Verney's ears by Mr. Vernor, who had never been able to break himself of the habit of dropping in on his friends in Forty-ninth Street even after the advent of this ardent young man from the West, who seemed to be thoroughly at home there, so that even if Verney had not remembered Benton, whom he had met in June at Mrs. Cumloch's dinner in Lake Forest, he would have known who he was and of his attentions to Harriet. He knew, too, and from the same source — for Richmond Vernor had never ceased to mourn that his nephew

The Politician

persisted so determinedly in refusing to take advantage of his chance with Miss Rand, which the older man was as positive as ever still existed, and to reproach him for the same,—that Billy Vandewater had by no means retired from the running himself and, so far as his campaign activities would permit, had been assiduously pressing his suit with the young heiress by means of daily instalments of flowers and bonbons and flying calls at her house in his motor between speeches.

But these things Verney heard with the mask-like calm and indifferent smile of the non-combatant. The news of this ardent courtship by these rival suitors of the girl, whose society he had himself once sought with the same ardor, concerned him, he felt, no more than “the thunder of the captains and the shouting” concerns the soldier in the battle who lies dead under their feet.

He was out of the fight, he knew, and though it might be harder than he thought, though it might make him suffer as he had not thought of suffering, he must, he knew equally well, remain so. He must sit by, looking on without lifting his hand to prevent it, until the end—until the girl had promised to make one or the other of the contestants, a happy man. That was his portion in life, that was the part he had elected to play.

There were present, Verney saw as he rose to begin his speech, a number of what the newspapers call society people, most of whom he knew. In one group under the chaperonage of the gay little Mrs. de Albert he

Verney Loses His Temper

saw Gladys Leverich and his sister Carol and the two young men who had been with Mrs. Ordway's party at the open-air horse-show, Robin Hill and Gerald Merrick. In another he recognized Mrs. Ordway herself and two men who had been at college with Oliver Ordway, and who were now his wife's almost constant companions. In an upper box he observed the beautiful Mrs. Gibbs's plumed hat and long slender shoulders just visible above its railings, and smiled to see the blonde head and boyish form of Stevie Cass beside her.

"Poor Cora!" he thought pityingly — for pity is the only sentiment a man cherishes toward the woman who has tried to make a fool of him and failed,— "she must amuse herself, I suppose," and he turned to face his audience.

It was not with satisfaction, however, that he faced it. His minute's survey was sufficient to tell him that it was largely composed of that element among the public which looks upon elections and campaigns only as a chance for fun. He was neither a great actor nor a born orator, but his training in politics had endowed him with the great actor's and born orator's faculty of "sizing up" an audience. It was disappointing to find it so, but he was none the less certain that curiosity and a desire for entertainment had gathered these people together, more than anything else. Among the "society people" present, for instance, he knew his friends had come only to hear Verney Ellis speak,—no matter what he said,—and his enemies to ridicule Verney Ellis,—no matter what he said. It

The Politician

was maddening, but true, that in both cases their interest was purely personal. As for the main body of people there, he felt that they were indifferent. Their attitude said plainly enough, "These elections have nothing to do with me, but I'll listen," as they leant back in their chairs and prepared themselves for the duty with the air of doing some one a favor.

There were indeed any number of indications observable to his quick eye that helped to convince him that the enormous concourse of people sitting there in the theatre waiting to hear him speak had come for any number of other reasons besides a desire for light on the question of the State elections. The simple statement of fact that was all that had been required of him by his village audiences in his tour of the State, and that had been all-sufficient to press home the fitness of the Republican party to select men for public office who would make for honest and efficient government, he realized would be powerless to make an impression on this cosmopolitan New York audience, whose sole idea that evening was to be diverted.

The fact was they didn't care about the elections, these people; they didn't care who won or what party came into power. With a feeling of indignation that it was so Verney saw that it was his task that night to *make* them care; that his problem was not to prove the superiority of one candidate or one party in the coming elections, but to arouse interest in the elections themselves. The smiling, tolerant front which his hearers in general presented to him, which said as plainly

Verney Loses His Temper

as words could say it, "I came to be amused, I wonder if the young man on the platform is going to do it," enraged Verney not a little, and he fell upon it with the bitter determination to dent it or die.

In the heat of his resentment of this attitude, in his eagerness to make his auditors discard it, he forgot his dislike of public speaking and dared to be eloquent. But true eloquence is as different from spread-eagleism as the sun from the moon, and Verney, to achieve it, had to steer a masterly course between the rocks of flamboyancy and the reef of false sentiment; and being a first-class politician he accomplished the feat without once mentioning Alexander Hamilton, or beginning a period with "from the Atlantic to the Pacific, from the statue of Liberty to the Golden Gate," or indulging in "grand grammar."

He began his speech with a fiery denunciation of indifference as an attitude toward elections. He said it was the duty of every one to be interested, that it was the duty of every man to join the army of voters and that that army should go to the polls just as any army went to war,—to fight. That if the people believed the party bosses controlled the primaries, that was all the more reason why they should attend the primaries in force to protect their interests, instead of staying away, and that every man who didn't vote at the primaries was a deserter. He said the Republic needed the support of every one of its citizens if it was to endure; and that if every citizen took an interest in government it would endure; and that Governments in the

The Politician

past had been well known to have fallen from lack of the support of the people. Here he was interrupted, to his surprise — for he was not looking for applause, — by a burst of cheering. Those who least deserve it are usually the ones most complacent about accepting flattery, and the loudest cheers that met Verney's implication that the people were all-powerful, came from the throats of those least active in public affairs.

“You say one man's vote can't matter?” he asked, leaning forward with flashing eyes. “I say you are wrong. The coöperation of every citizen in the Republic is essential to the preservation of the balance of power upon which the perfection and endurance of our political fabric depend.

“You say that's too much to ask of every citizen; that he has n't time to coöperate, to show interest in public affairs; that if honest and efficient government is dependent upon personal exertion, it's too big a price too pay? I say again that you are wrong; that no price is too big to pay for honest and efficient government [he raised his hand to quell the instant applause this statement elicited], and that no patriot can do less than pay it.” The clapping burst forth unchecked.

“And I use the word ‘patriot’ seriously,” he went on, “although a great many people don't seem to understand what it means. They seem to think patriotism is a thing to be ashamed of, a sentiment to be put away and only brought out and used on the Fourth of July and other national holidays; but it's not. It is n't a brass band and a bunch of flags, it's a concrete force

Verney Loses His Temper

for good"—he nodded energetically to emphasize each word,—“that if put into practical operation in politics at election times can meet corruption on its own ground and vanquish it single-handed!” (Applause. People like to hear about vice being put to rout, even if they are too lazy to want to help to rout it themselves.)

“To my mind a man requires to be only two things in order to be eligible to public office, a patriot and a politician. In order to see why the second requirement is necessary, assuming that the first is admitted, the definition of the term ‘politician’ must be thoroughly understood.

“The general interpretation of the word is, I believe, synonymous with the term ‘ward boss.’ It is at least synonymous with the phrase ‘power wielded for evil.’ This idea is so common it has become a fact that the worst thing one enemy in the campaign can say about another is that he’s a ‘politician.’” He stopped and smiled, as the audience, realizing that he made this statement from personal experience, laughed appreciatively.

“But this connotation of the word is not the correct one,” he went on. “To be called a politician is not in itself a reproach to any man. Because, as I read in some magazine recently, no man can be, not to say a successful, but a competent public man, unless he understands and likes and practises the game of politics.”

(“I guess that’s so,” said those present who had previously thought all politicians must be bad men,

The Politician

and "Of course, that's so," said those of the maligned who were there.)

"A very good definition of a politician that I found in the same article," continued Verney, "is that he's a man who possesses certain qualities that are essential to a proper conduct of public affairs, and without which he will fall short of the highest efficiency if opportunity should place him in an important administrative position.

"That is n't to say, you know," he added earnestly, "that there are no corrupt politicians. I would n't attempt to deny that any more than I would attempt to deny that there are corrupt men in any other walk of life; and to quote further, it is n't to say that every politician is a good administrator, either, but it *is* to say that every good administrator is a politician. [Applause.]

"You are not to understand from this that I think that only a politician by actual practice is eligible to office, but that I am convinced the man who proves to be able when in office has generally by nature something of the politician in him.

"It is not, either, only the men who have power and money that get the offices; the idea that the average citizen who has no pull stands no chance to run for office is a mistaken one, and no excuse at all for indifference to elections. For it is true now as it was then, what Abraham Lincoln said in one of his speeches, that 'it is the glory of this great Republic that its highest places are open to its humblest citizens; that American

Verney Loses His Temper

institutions make it possible that to hold the highest places in the State not glitter of wealth is needed, or trickery, or demagogery; only honesty, hard thinking, and fixed resolve!’ [Tumultuous applause in response to this quotation from “Old Abe.”]

“But to return to my text,” he smiled around him as if he felt he had neared the end of what he had felt pressing so upon him to say, “that the coöperation of every voter in the country is necessary to gain and maintain good government,—what I’m trying to impress upon you to-night is that in order to get a thing it is necessary to want it first. We must really want good government before we can expect to get it; we must be anxious to fight corruption before we can conquer it. In spite of the fact that a small minority of empty heads laugh at reform and its promoters [he glanced pleasantly but piercingly around at the various fashionables present who largely represented the class he referred to, and they squirmed uneasily in their seats], we must wish for reform before we can expect to improve the present condition of things.

“This fight against corruption has been going on a long time, but it has never been so active as in the past ten years. Previous to that time impurity in political conditions, though present, has been unacknowledged and glossed over, so that it was difficult to deal with; but now, owing to the tide of investigation and reform that has been sweeping over the country, it has been routed out into the light of day. Like the measles, when the nature of the disease has been

The Politician

discovered, the spots have appeared on the outside. [Laughter.] And they will soon be gotten rid of. For we're all of us, when you come right down to it — Democrats, Independents, and Republicans,— working together to one end,—to make this the greatest country in the world! [Applause.] And whether by means of direct nomination or by means of the convention, by means of new-school reform or old-school reform, by abolishing old institutions or introducing new ones, we're going to succeed!

“The method of succeeding is n't so important. The important thing is that if we care enough to wish for reform, if we're patriotic enough honestly to want honest and efficient government and make up our minds to have it —” he lowered his voice suddenly to a pitch that thrilled, each word being distinctly audible,—“*we are going to get it!*”

He sat down amidst a storm of applause so spontaneous, so genuine, and so prolonged, that it gave good promise to the young man that he had succeeded in making that difficult audience care if it was only for that evening, and he felt that in spite of the fact that he had not touched upon the various issues of the campaign or boomed the Republican candidate for Governor, or heaped personal abuse upon his rival, he had accomplished something, and that it had not been time wasted.

His friend Tommy Beekman, however, was not so sure of that as Verney was. Advancing to congratulate his friend on the success of his speech, which he could

Verney Loses His Temper

not deny, he took occasion at the same time to reproach him that he had been so general in his statements, and had departed so from the style of his previous speeches.

"You didn't boost the grand old party once," he complained, "or cheer for Oliver, or roast Billy the snob!"

Verney smiled deprecatingly.

"Well, you see," he said, "I had so many other things on my mind to say. The minute I looked at that damned audience, I knew most of them came for fun or for curiosity, not because they were interested in the elections, and it made me mad. I wanted to say something that would stir them up and set them thinking. I'd rather have them vote against us than not at all, you know."

"You stirred them up, I should say," admitted Beekman.

"And then, you know, Tommy," Verney added confidentially, "I never had a chance before to talk at so many people that couldn't get away from me! I had to make the most of it!" He laughed outright.

"Well, never mind," said his friend magnanimously; "it doesn't matter so much. Ordway is pretty solid in New York, you know, anyway. I was only afraid it wouldn't win as many votes for you personally as your other speeches have."

But the event did not justify the little Albany man's apprehensions in that respect. For the most part the people were saying to themselves as they filed out of the theatre to the strains of "Yankee Doodle" played

The Politician

by the big band at the door, "I don't care what party he belongs to; I'm going to vote for him not because he's a Republican or because he is n't, but because I'd like a man like that, who is n't afraid to speak his mind, who is in earnest, who *really* thinks, and says what he thinks, too,—for Attorney-general. It speaks well for his ability to defend the people's interests."

The newspapers printed the speech the next morning, and some of them said it was very good; and others said that the doctrine of Patriotism—a sentiment that knew no party and acknowledged no leader—as preached by a party man and a member of the machine, was political chicanery and nothing else; and that the young man who made the speech was an experienced politician and nothing else, who knew the vote-getting value of the sentiment of patriotism properly appealed to, and cared not at all for the sentiment itself. Thousands of people read the speech, nevertheless, and without paying any attention to what the newspapers said one way or the other, a great number of them voted for Verney on the strength of it. Genuine uprightness and principle, even if it is found in a machine politician, is not after all so very difficult to recognize.

In the lobby of the theatre Verney encountered Harriet. She was standing by a pillar, her sweet face and large black eyes evidently searching the crowd for some one as it passed her. Mrs. Cumloch was not to be seen, but George Benton was at her elbow.

"Oh, there you are!" she cried eagerly, catching

• Verney Loses His Temper

sight of Ellis; and as he disengaged himself from the men he was walking with and came up to her, "Aunt Lydia didn't feel well and she's gone home, but we wanted, Mr. Benton and I,"—she glanced at the young man at her side,—“to wait and congratulate you on your speech.”

“It was a wonder,” said Benton in something the same phrase he had used in praising another speech of Ellis's, the one he had made at the Republican National Convention as long ago as the preceding June. “I tell you it made me feel like a criminal, to think I've paid so little attention to elections and voting and things! I'm always travelling around election times, or else I've been so busy on my farm I haven't voted, you know.” He ended in an apologetic tone that would almost have made Verney laugh if the speaker had n't been so evidently sincere.

Verney believed he had every reason to dislike Benton, whom he barely remembered having met that time of the Chicago Convention. Was he not openly devoting himself to Harriet Rand? and was not his devotion apparently received with favor? But he could not help feeling pleased by his enthusiasm and honest expression of admiration for himself.

“It's not too late to begin to pay attention now,” he said, with his quick, friendly smile.

The other man ceased polishing his glasses excitedly and beamed back.

“No,” he said, “and I mean to, the minute I get home, but I wish you'd talk some more about it to me.”

The Politician

He turned to Harriet. "Can't we all go and have supper somewhere?" he asked eagerly. "It's only twelve o'clock."

Harriet smiled indulgently. "We could n't do that very well, George, but we might go home and get something to eat," she said. "Aunt Lydia was to send the carriage back for us, you know."

"Will you, Ellis?" asked Benton, taking up the invitation promptly.

Verney had planned some more work to do that night, as it happened, but Benton's anxiety that he should be of the party was so genuine, and the appeal in Harriet's eyes so sweet that he decided on the instant to delay it.

"Of course, I will come," he agreed, and they went and found the carriage.

Mrs. Cumloch had gone up to her room when they reached the house, but she sent word that coffee and sandwiches would be served to them in a few minutes, if they would excuse her from coming down.

The three made themselves comfortable in the dining-room, where the long dark table reflected the low-hung Tiffany light and a leaping grate fire.

"I'm much too excited to eat," said Harriet, seating herself in the big leather chair at one end of the table; "you see, I've never been at a political meeting before. How about you two?"

"My appetite," said Verney, as the two men sat down one on each side of her, "is like old dog Tray,

Verney Loses His Temper

nothing can drive it away, not even having to make a speech to a crowd of people who don't want to hear it."

"It seems to me a terrible reflection on the country that you should be able to make that statement," remarked Benton. "I suppose it will all be changed, Harriet, and there will be no more indifference when women vote?"

"But they never will," affirmed Ellis quickly; "this woman's-suffrage business is only an agitation of the moment." That there was any place for women in politics was an inconceivable idea to him.

"I don't know," said Harriet, loyal to her sex, though she hated to disagree with Verney, "I believe it's here to stay."

"And I believe," he replied, "that in a year or two the whole thing will be as much an exploded theory as the one that the earth is square instead of round, or the theory of affinities."

"It's making noise enough, certainly," said Harriet, "as far as exploding is concerned; but," she added, "don't you believe in affinities? Don't you believe that there is just one woman in the world for every man?"

"Candidly, I don't," returned Verney, "and I'll tell you why."

"I confess I'm interested."

"You see," he said smiling, "if you'll look it up in the encyclopædia, you'll find that there are, as a matter of fact, more women in the world than there are men!"

They all laughed, and the talk drifted on.

The Politician

The two men were slow in starting their promised discussion of politics, perhaps because they were conscious of a feeling of restraint in the presence of the girl who, they were both aware, had played an important part in the life of each; and at first they addressed all their remarks to Miss Rand rather than to each other.

But Harriet, while appreciating the situation perfectly, was nevertheless resolute in her determination that these men whom she thought so much of should also think a great deal of each other; and with tireless activity and skill she returned the ball of conversation which they sent her in turns, so that it had to bound between both men at least once before it was down and out.

And before long under the unfluence of her impartial turning from one to the other, as if both were equally her friends, and as if they knew it, Verney's feeling of resentment against this man for the high place he seemed to hold in Harriet's estimation, and Benton's embarrassment in the presence of the man he had once feared as a rival, vanished, and the two were soon having the ball all to themselves, sending it back and forth between them without once throwing it in Harriet's direction.

But the girl did not mind. Clearly Verney was interested in George, she could tell that by the attention with which he listened to what he had to say, and by the sparkle of eagerness in his own eyes when he replied;

Verney Loses His Temper

and George was of course thoroughly charmed by Verney — that was to be expected.

The eyes of the young men met and flashed with greater frequency, and their discussion became more and more animated as the hour wore away, and Harriet, watching them, leaned back in her chair with the contented air of one who sees a good work well done.

CHAPTER XXI

"NOT LAUNCELOT OR ANOTHER"

HARRIET was sitting at Mrs. Chittenden's grand piano in the upstairs sitting-room, not many mornings later, playing Massenet's "Elégie." Her aunt had gone out to a dress-maker's appointment, and she was alone. It was a comfortable sunny room occupying the whole front width of the long narrow house, and very pleasing to the eye with its mushroom-colored walls, its yellow silk curtains at the windows, and the gold-colored cushions heaped on brown velvet divan and chair. A splendid oil painting of the Bridge of Sighs hung over the piano and under it on the glittering ebony of the instrument a great sheaf of dark-red roses lay.

Harriet's eyes were fixed upon the flowers as she played, although her thoughts were not with the sender, Billy Vandewater, whose daily gift they were; they dwelt rather upon love itself than upon any one man — upon its beauty, its mystery, its elusiveness, and its pain. The subdued minor plaint of Massenet's music, with its murmur of passion, its perpetual crying out at the wonder of life, was sweet in her ears, perhaps because she thought she had so recently parted with

“Not Launcelot or Another”

happiness, perhaps because happiness in reality was flying toward her on outstretched wings.

She did not analyze the feeling; she only knew, as she drew the beautiful melody from the willing keys and gave it to the room, that it spoke to her, that it soothed and comforted her as if it said, “All happiness is relative; the flower of love is not everlasting, and affection, comradeship, friendship, the nature of which is more enduring, are things very much worth the having.”

She stopped playing, clasped her hands with her elbows on the keyboard, and sat musing. Presently a maid came up and announced that Miss Rand had a caller, a young man. There was no card, and he had not given his name, and the maid, who was new, did not know it.

“Bring him up here,” said Harriet.

She knew it must be either George Benton or Billy Vandewater. No one but a lover would expect her to know his name without any help from him, by second sight as it were, and no one but a lover would call at eleven o'clock in the morning. Which was it, she wondered. She had seen both men almost every day since her return from Chicago, and it might as well be one as the other. She grew quite excited trying to guess which it could be before he came, even going so far as to look in the tall mirror at the other end of the room, though she was no coquette, to see if her plain blue silk morning dress was as becoming as she hoped.

It was Vandewater, probably, she thought — she had seen George Benton last. She looked at the roses lying

The Politician

in their splendor on the top of the piano, and was conscious of a half regretful feeling that she was not made happier by the thought. He was a very fascinating man, Vandewater, and she was interested in him; he aroused in her the woman's instinct to reform, for she was not unfamiliar with his reputation for fast living; but she knew, too, as she looked at his roses, that the only feeling she could ever have for him, although she was not at all positive he wanted her to have a different one, was —

The maid appeared in the doorway and George Benton followed her into the room.

"Oh, it was you!" cried Harriet, low but rather joyously, because of her surprise.

"Of course!" he said fondly. "Whom did you think? But let's sit down, I've got a grand piece of news for you."

"I thought it must be something unusual to bring you at this hour." She sat down on the divan in the window.

"Not at all," he reproached, seating himself beside her; "I'd come at this time every day if you would let me!"

She laughed. "Well, go on, what's your news?"

He polished his glasses excitedly. "It's the greatest thing in the world; you'll never believe it." He paused, looking at her eagerly.

"How irritating you are!" she said with emphasis; "you're worse than a girl for keeping people in suspense! What is the greatest thing in the world?"

“Not Launcelot or Another”

“You know how good he’s been about letting me help him with his campaign work this last week?” he asked seriously.

“Verney, you mean? Yes, I know. He’s kept you so busy, I’ve hardly seen anything of you.”

She had seen him once at least every day, but the young man nevertheless seemed pleased by the statement. He flushed to the roots of his negative light-brown hair.

“Do you mean that?” he stammered; “do you mean, I mean, you care how much you see me?”

His eagerness confused Harriet a little, but it did not displease her.

“Of course,” she answered stoutly, “but do go on with your news.”

“It’s the greatest thing in the world; you’ll never believe it!” said Benton, who was not given to profligacy in speech. If a phrase or a sentence said what he wanted to say the first time he used it, he had no shame about using it a second.

“If you say that again,” she announced positively, “I’ll go right out of the room; I will truly, Georgie!”

“No, wait! Don’t go! I’ll tell you,” he said, rising as if he could conquer his emotion better on his feet. “He’s such an awfully fine man, such a dead game sport”—it was his favorite expression,—“works so hard, you know, against such odds!” He stopped, confronting the girl. “He’s a king, Harriet! that’s what he is, a king.”

The Politician

"I know it," she assented, "and I'm so glad to have you know it, too."

"So am I! Why, I would n't have missed knowing him for all the money I'm going to lose on my stock farm this year! It's given me a new interest in life just to come in contact with an enthusiast like him. I've always been such a lazy beggar, you know." He sighed ruefully, but brightened as Harriet shook her head. "It's been a liberal education to see how that fellow works, to meet anyone that cares about anything as he cares about politics, to see how he goes at the thing!"

"Is n't it wonderful? Is n't it tremendous?" said Harriet.

Benton walked excitedly up and down. "I don't know what it will all come to, I don't know that I'll actually go in for politics myself at all; but if it was only for the faith in myself it's given me to see him make life so much worth the living, I'd feel indebted to him."

"Dear George!" said Harriet, "dear George!" There was genuine fondness in her eyes as she looked at him.

"And that is n't all," he said, turning to her, his good, honest face abeam. "Do you know what he's done now, Harriet? what he did last night? what I came to tell you about?"

"No," she said with mock despair, "and I don't believe I ever shall know!"

"Yes," he said; "I'm going to tell you. You know

“Not Launcelot or Another”

how hard up he's been, trying to meet the expenses of this campaign? They've altogether exceeded the amount the party appropriated for it, you know, Vandewater has set such a pace.”

“Yes? Yes?”

“Well,” he lowered his voice as if what he had to say were too wonderful for any other method of communication, “last night he told me—I made him promise—that he'd let me give him enough to cover all costs in excess of what he could raise to spend, and enough to finish up the campaign with gloriously! What do you think of that?”

His face was radiant.

“Oh, George, no!” she said.

“Yes,” he asseverated triumphantly, “it was only a few thousands.” Then he grew graver. “It made so much difference to him, it made me ashamed to have it make so little difference to me. It does n't seem right, somehow, that a man like that should be handicapped because he has n't money enough to do things, when I've got it to throw away—does it?”

Harriet came close up to him and looked up into his kindly face glowing with generosity, with tears in her eyes.

“Perhaps not,” she said, “but all the same I think you're the finest man in the world for giving it to him.”

And of her own accord she put both arms about his neck and kissed him.

Harriet went into Mrs. Cumloch's room late that night, as she always did before going to bed, and told

The Politician

her aunt with a calm, tranquil smile that she was engaged to George Benton.

The older lady's immediate reply to this astonishing communication — for that sort of announcement, no matter how much it is expected, is nevertheless always a surprise when it comes — was a silent embrace.

They discussed the important happening later, of course, at length; but at the moment of its impartment, Mrs. Cumloch, aware as she was of the other hope her niece had cherished, could find no words with which to congratulate her on the fulfilment of the opposite one so long entertained by herself. Harriet was grateful for this quiet acceptance of her announcement, suspecting as she did that her attachment for Verney Ellis had not been unremarked by her aunt. She did not attempt to enlarge upon the subject herself, but after a word or two on other matters turned to leave the room. But she was not permitted to escape. Curiosity had conquered Mrs. Cumloch's first impulse to be silent, and the fear, inspired by Harriet's controlled manner and her indifferent method of telling her piece of news, that her niece was not altogether happy, impelled her to make a parting comment on it.

"I'm so glad about it all, Harriet dear," she said rather timidly. "I was so afraid it was going to be that good-for-nothing Verney Ellis!" This last almost spitefully.

"Why do you say that — 'good-for-nothing'?" in chilling tones from the door.

Mrs. Cumloch could not say as she thought in her

“Not Launcelot or Another”

heart, “Because he has treated my darling niece so badly!” so she did n’t say anything.

“I’d rather you did n’t speak of him like that,” continued Harriet; “it is n’t just; and then, he is my friend”; but she added more sweetly, as if in concession to her aunt’s feeling that she had suffered at the young man’s hands, which though unspoken was yet perfectly apparent to the girl, “don’t worry about that, Aunt Lydia, I’m quite, quite happy.” And she said it as if she meant it, too. There are all kinds of happiness.

“I’m so glad,” murmured her aunt.

“Yes. And do you know something?”—with a serious air of making a discovery —“I don’t think any girl ever marries the man she thinks she wants to marry, as far as that goes!”

When she had gone, the older lady leaned back in her chair fairly weak with the emotion the news of Harriet’s engagement aroused in her.

“What character! what character!” she exclaimed, as the door closed upon her niece, “not to sit down under the blow, not to let disappointment prostrate her! To see that life after all offers more than one chance of happiness! That’s my niece, my more than daughter, my Harriet!”. And she fell to thanking God for his goodness in letting the cloud that had threatened the clear sky of the girl’s peace of mind pass over her head and leave her unharmed.

The next person whom Harriet wanted to tell about her engagement was Verney; she was happy and she knew it would make him happy to know it; but two

The Politician

weeks passed without giving her an opportunity. In all that time she had not seen him, though Benton, who was doing devoted service, helping him with the business that was incident to the wind-up of the campaign, brought her news of him constantly, and she had heard from him once. Verney had dashed her off a hurried scrawl one day on paper with the heading "Regular Republican Organization" for proof of how hard he was pressed for time, just to say that they were going to elect their candidate for President by a large majority and carry the State for Ordway easily, although he did n't feel sure about the Attorney-generalship; and to assure her with evident satisfaction that his District was O. K., and everybody hard at work.

Although he could n't go to see her as he used to do, Verney took a melancholy satisfaction in the pleasures of friendship, now that their recent understanding had unequivocally established their relations on that foundation, and in telling her of his work, in which he knew her to be interested for its own sake.

It was not to be wondered at, however, that Harriet was unable to get speech with Ellis, so engrossed he was with the closing days of the campaign. As a candidate on the Republican ticket and executive member of his District, his time had been filled to overflowing. That he was not actually deprived of all sleep was due to the able assistance of his self-constituted lieutenants, Tommy Beekman and George Benton, who shoulder to shoulder fought his fight with him every step of the way, and by taking the responsibility of minor details upon

“Not Launcelot or Another”

them, forced Verney to take a few hours' rest each night. Verney was very grateful to them, especially to Benton, who had been his faithful shadow — ready to run any errand, no matter how trifling, that would save his friend — ever since Harriet's supper party following Verney's great speech, and who was not a member of the organization as Beekman was, and had no interest in the outcome of the campaign except for Ellis's sake.

October the thirty-first found the last speech made and the campaign practically over. Sunday the first of November and the days before election were inactive ones for most people, devoted to bands and bets. For Verney, however, although it was only one of waiting to his friend Ordway, the day before election was the busiest of the whole campaign. When he was not with his District captains, his presence was required at Republican headquarters, which kept him moving about a great deal; and then, too, there was much detail to the business of distributing election-day literature, a large part of which work fell on his shoulders.

An enormous parade had been going by the windows of the Times Square Republican Club all the afternoon, where he was busy sending out thousands of little white ballot cards, blue slips with “Vote early” on them, and pink ones with instructions how to vote. This tremendous amount of work, which he had had to get through in the past week, had kept him for the last three or four nights from returning to his home to sleep, which accounted for the fact that he did not get a note Harriet had sent him some days ago, until Tuesday, elec-

The Politician

tion-day itself. He had come in very late the night before and did not look at his accumulated mail until next morning, when Wilson, who had been told to call him early, brought it up to his room.

It was just a line in her pretty handwriting to say that she had something she wanted very much to talk to him about and would he come in and see her as soon as he could? She knew it would be hard for him to get away, but she would n't keep him long, and any time would suit her. If he would let her know what hour and what day he could come she would be in.

Verney's brain was too full of the election and the possibility of defeat or victory even to guess what it was that Harriet wanted to talk to him about; but it was enough, so much did he think of her, that she wanted to see him at all.

He was very sorry that he had received the note so late and he told himself as he stuffed it in his pocket and hurried to headquarters that he would go that very day, election-day or not.

At five that afternoon the voting was over and he found time to telephone Harriet that he would be up at eight o'clock.

That would give him time, he thought, to see that the count was proceeding legally in all the polling-places of his District and that everything was being properly watched; and as the returns would only be beginning to come in at eight, he felt sure that he would have half an hour to spend with Miss Rand before they became really exciting.

“Not Launcelot or Another”

Harriet was therefore very much surprised when that hour came to have the Democratic candidate for Attorney-general shown into the upstairs sitting-room where she was awaiting Verney.

She surveyed Vandewater's form and dark face in amazement.

“Have n't you anything to do election night except to come and call on a girl?” she said, smiling and holding out her hand.

“Nothing so important,” said the young man, sitting down beside her on the divan in the window. But he looked at the clock almost involuntarily as if the time were indeed precious to him.

“Then you must either feel sure of winning or certain you're going to lose, one or the other. Those are the only reasons that could possibly account for your lack of interest in the returns!”

“Yes, except one other!”

He looked at her quickly, the color dark in his face, the blue veins near his temples swelling, and with an intensity that frightened her.

“And what is that?” she asked coolly, edging a little farther away.

“A greater interest in a girl,” declared Vandewater.

Harriet drew a long breath. She wondered whether he was going to ask her to marry him. He had sent her flowers, of course, and been more or less devoted, but other men had done that before, and the result had not always been the same. Some had ended by asking her, and some had not. She sighed. She should know

The Politician

the signs of a proposal by this time, she felt, if experience was the teacher it purported to be; but for all that she was quite in the dark as to whether the young man before her was really on the verge of one or not. She could only hope not. She hated to refuse people; and then, of course, it would be a particularly unpleasant task since she would be obliged to tell him that she not only did not care for him but that she did care for some one else,—for George Benton, as the case happened to be. A throb at her heart as she made this reflection told her how glad she was that this was true, that she did care for George Benton. It was such a safe, comfortable feeling!

“No, it’s because you think that you’re going to win that you were able to tear yourself away from hearing the returns long enough to come and see me to-night,” she began, striving by the lightness of her tone to bring the conversation back to less serious ground. “And it was nice of you, too! You knew, of course, that I was interested in your success!”

In her anxiety to accomplish her object she was saying more than she meant or felt, for, of course, she was not interested in his success as long as it meant Verney’s defeat.

“Yes, I do think I’m going to win!” agreed Billy Vandewater, rising and walking up and down agitatedly. “I think we’ve got ’em easy! But that is n’t why I came to-night,—because there was nothing more important to keep me; I came”—he stopped and turned toward her suddenly — “to ask you to marry me!”

“Not Launcelot or Another”

And then Harriet understood. She saw that this young man—for whatever reason, whether from enmity toward Verney, from ambition, or some other motive—wanted to win the election more than anything else in the world, although he thought he wanted more to marry her; and that he was at that moment convinced he would win; under which circumstances his vanity, of which he had more than the usual share of man, had demanded that he should win the girl too. A moderate success was not success at all to Vandewater. He must succeed overwhelmingly, or not at all.

It was evident to Harriet that although he might really care for her in his own fashion, it was more his desire to be all-conquering that had inspired him to ask her to marry him, and it was this ambition to be victorious over Verney in every field, both in politics and love, that had brought him to her that night. She was to be his crown of crowns, the topmost feather in his cap, gild his fine gold for him. And while she did him the justice to believe he was sincere according to his lights in his wish to marry her, this knowledge made it easier for her to wake him from his dream.

“I’m sorry, Mr. Vandewater,” she said rising, “very sorry to hear you say that, for I can’t possibly marry you; and if I have in any way given you reason to think I would, I must ask you to forgive me. I’ve been stupid enough not to realize that you wanted me to.”

She let him have it by degrees, the truth, allowing him to grasp the idea that she did not care for him before she broke the news that she did care for some-

The Politician

one else. It would be a blow to him, she knew, whether he cared deeply for her or not, for he was a proud, imperious man, whose great fortune enabled him to gratify every wish, and to whom the word "refusal" was a stranger.

The color died out of his face now. He fixed her with a long stare much more eloquent of anger and disappointment than words could have been.

"You can't marry me?" he repeated with an inflection almost of astonishment, as if he could hardly believe that such a thing could be happening to him.

"I'm afraid not," she said pityingly, his surprise was so ingenuous.

His dark, red-veined eyes roved over her, and he saw all at once how sweet and lovely she was, how desirable. He forgot all about the election and his hope of triumphing over his enemy in respect to this girl as well as in respect to the campaign.

"Why not?" he said, his voice shaken with real feeling. He was a man deeply in earnest now.

Harriet saw that she had not done him justice, complete justice, after all. He was capable of caring more than she had thought he could. Genuine compassion welled up into her Madonna eyes.

"Because I'm going to marry some one else," she said very gently.

The color rushed on a sudden back into Vandewater's face, the veins on his forehead stood out more alarmingly than ever.

“Not Launcelot or Another”

“Not — not — Ellis?” he said, the words coming with difficulty through his shut teeth.

“No, not Ellis,” Harriet said, and smiled faintly to see the instant relief that spread over his face; “I’m engaged to Mr. Benton.”

The blow was a severe one, but if it had to be, the young man was thankful that at least that mercy had been vouchsafed him, that he had been spared the intolerable sting of losing to the one man he hated to lose to, more than to any one else in the world. The thought enabled to take his leave almost with a light heart.

“My motor is waiting,” he said. “I had planned to bring you back to my office to hear the returns,—my mother and a lot of people are there; I’ve got a special wire, you know. If things had gone as I hoped, that is —” He regarded her gravely.

“It’s very kind of you,” faltered Harriet, more distressed for having upset his plan than for having refused to be his wife, and very thankful that he was going before Verney arrived.

She did not fancy the prospect of entertaining both the candidates for Attorney-general at the same time.

“It does n’t matter,” said the young man pleasantly and a little proudly. “Good-night.”

In the hall below as he was going out he encountered another man coming in, and recognized Verney, as the Politician, half an hour later than he had expected to be, breathlessly asked the butler for Miss Rand.

The two having been brought face to face in that way

The Politician

could hardly avoid speaking, and as they did so each surveyed the other with a hostility that was perfectly apparent even in the one word they gave each other, "Evening." There was also astonishment in both their faces, for each had believed the other to be at the headquarters of his party getting the returns, and it showed the unusual powers of attraction of the girl upstairs that both young candidates should have called upon her on election night.

As they stood eyeing each other a moment, a smile of exultation spread suddenly over Vandewater's face born of his knowledge that if Verney was on the same errand, which he could only believe to be the case, since he was not aware of the true inwardness of the situation between his rival and Harriet, and since no other errand seemed important enough to take a candidate for election from the scene of battle at that hour, it would be as fruitless as his own had been. And as he thought of that, Vandewater could almost have loved George Benton for being the man Miss Rand was going to marry.

The smile puzzled Ellis a little; and as he ran up the stairs to the sitting-room, glad in his heart that Harriet had not chosen to receive him in the library, which he had such good reason to remember unpleasantly, he wondered why it was such a triumphant one; but he at once forgot it when he found himself in the girl's presence.

"What can I do for you?" he asked, clasping her hand eagerly.

"Nothing," she said, as they sat down. "Did you

“Not Launcelot or Another”

think I sent for you only because I wanted something of you?”

“I hoped so,” he said simply; “I like to do things for you.”

“I know it, or you would n’t have come to-day when it was such a very important time. You were very good.”

“Tell me what you wanted to talk to me about,” he said, with a quick, direct look.

She gazed at him a moment with a tenderness that, if it could be said of so young and distinctly girlish-looking a girl, was almost motherly.

“I’m going to get married, Verney,” she said.

An exclamation that she did not exactly catch, but the nature of which she guessed was profane, escaped the young man, who started violently.

“Not Vandewater?” he said, remembering on the instant the look of triumph in his rival’s face when they met in the hall. His teeth closed fiercely on his lower lip.

“No,” she answered quickly, remembering for her part how the other man had said, “Not Ellis?” when he had heard the news of her engagement. She smiled a little to see how much alike men were after all, even the most unlike. “It’s George Benton,” she added.

“Ah!” Verney said, turning his face away; and then after a moment, “That’s good, that’s fine. He’s one of the best. I think the world of him.”

There was another pause. Harriet did n’t know why she found it difficult to speak, but so it undeniably was.

The Politician

"I was afraid," Verney continued, "it was the other. I'm awfully glad it is n't."

"So am I. But you know," she shook her head, "there was never any chance of that from the beginning."

They said very little more on the subject until in a few minutes Verney rose to go; then he took her hand, pressed it warmly, and the color rose to his high cheek bones and the bright blue of his eye dimmed.

"I am very poor at expressing myself," he said rather huskily, "but I want to say, what I want to tell you is that I wish you every happiness in life, and that I am gladder than I could possibly tell you that you're going to marry so fine a fellow as George Benton."

That was all he said, but Harriet knew what was in his heart — that while he was sincerely glad she was going to be married, he yet felt a little lonely, a little as if he had lost something himself.

"Will you promise me something," she said, "before you go?"

"Anything; what is it?"

She backed away from him, her hands behind her like a child afraid of its own audacity.

"You won't like it, it's a piece of advice," she warned.

"Go ahead, I would take anything from you!"

She came nearer and just touched his sleeve with one finger.

"Then here it is," said she solemnly: "Don't — let — women — spoil — you!" And as he started a little, "You know they do. They run after you and make

“Not Launcelot or Another”

up to you all the time, and if you don't look out they 'll spoil you. Oh, Verney, do be careful!”—her voice grew more anxious — “I'm so afraid if you're not, it will interfere some day with your work, with your success in politics.”

He knew what she meant, and that it was true. Too great and too many intimacies with women had been the ruin politically of more than one man before now, and he nodded gravely in acquiescence.

Then astonishment overcame him. “But how did you know,” he asked surprisedly, “that they — that they —”

“That they spoiled you?” she finished for him, and laughed deliciously. “Why, how could I help knowing? You're so nice to look at!” But she had in reality told by subtler signs than that. He would have been surprised, perhaps, if he had known that so long ago as their talk together after Mrs. Cumloch's dinner in Lake Forest, at the very beginning of their acquaintance, the girl had discovered that the women he knew and liked, were very many, and the women who knew and liked him as many as the sands of the sea.

“Take care,” he advised, and laughing, too, “or you will be doing that yourself.”

“Ah, but I'm an old friend, a privileged friend. Is n't that different?”

He said it was. Her sweetness was beginning to be hard to bear.

“I must go,” he added; “it's after nine. The returns will be coming in fast now.”

The Politician

"How selfish I am," she cried, "to keep you! And oh, I do hope, I do hope you will win!"

She said it with all her heart, and Verney smiled radiantly.

"I think we will," he answered, his thoughts with the whole Republican party rather than upon the result of his own campaign for Attorney-general.

"And if you do, you know you will have no friend who will be gladder than I, don't you?"

He nodded, and then said consideringly,—

"Will it be that way, do you think, Harrie — after — after you are married?"

She looked at him with the greatest surprise.

"Why, yes!" she cried; "the only difference will be that then you will have two to be glad for you instead of one. George worships you now, you know, as it is. And we'll always, all three of us, be the best friends in the world!"

He smiled gratefully at her. "The best in the world!" he repeated, as if the words were a sort of talisman.

CHAPTER XXII

“I ALWAYS WANT MOST WHAT I CANNOT HAVE”

ONCE in the street again, Ellis stood hesitating, and then, in spite of the fact that he should have been at headquarters and that all the myriad and varied noises and excitements of election night in New York beckoned him, he gave the chauffeur of his taxicab Mr. Vernor's address and sped uptown.

He knew that his uncle, who had been laid up for a week with a sprained ankle, would be at home, and an overpowering need of sympathy compelled him to go, for he knew, too, that his uncle was the one person in the world whose sympathy would be welcome. Did he not care for Harriet too? That alone was reason enough, his nephew thought, for seeking the older man's society that night; although he could not have said himself in so many words what it was that he wanted sympathy for.

Mr. Vernor — who was sitting by a table loaded with books and magazines and election extras, with his bandaged foot on a chair, trying to read himself into forgetfulness of the irritating accident which had prevented him from going down to his club to get the returns — was very glad, indeed, to see his nephew, though not a little surprised.

The Politician

"Hello!" he said, "if it is n't the young candidate himself! What in time, James, has brought you so far uptown to-night?"

"Don't do that!" said Verney, who hated to be called "James." He then subsided into a big chair as suddenly as if his legs had given way beneath him.

The older man stared at him rather curiously. "How's the election going?" he asked next. "So far," and he indicated the paper he held in his hand as his source of information, "I should say it was all going our way."

"Yes?" said Verney. "Well, for me, I'm only glad it's over. I don't care much how it comes out."

"You don't care?" broke in his uncle in an amazement that was half indignant; "are you out of your head?"

Then, as if he really feared the truth of his accusation, he poured out some whiskey from the decanter on a little stand by his elbow.

"Here," he said, handing his nephew a little glass; "take that! It's pretty stiff, but you need it."

"I'll take it, if you say," returned Verney, "but why do I need it?"

"When a man who pretends to be a politician — who is running for office — gets as far away from the bulletin boards as you are, on election night, and says he does n't care, I feel reasonably sure he needs something," answered his uncle satirically, "and the chances are it's a drink."

“What I Cannot Have”

Verney pushed his glass away from him unfinished, a phenomenon which still further alarmed the other man.

“I’m lonely,” said he; “lonely, Uncle Ritchie.”

“You’re all in, you mean,” contradicted Mr. Verner; “done up with all this campaign business. And I don’t wonder. You’ve been doing the work of twenty men and as many horses.”

“Perhaps that’s it,” said Verney; but although he spoke without conviction, his uncle’s diagnosis of the case was partly correct.

The strain of the past six weeks had been indeed so great as to render the young man physically unfit to wrestle with a mental or moral crisis of any kind. And the realization of the profound loneliness of the career he had elected, did partake of the nature of a crisis in his life. The news of Harriet’s engagement, while it cannot be said to have made him in any sense repent his choice, had brought that realization sharply and definitely home to him. Although he was perfectly satisfied with his existence as he had arranged to have it, and would not have it otherwise, he could not at the same time be free from a feeling of loss, a sense of grief. It would not endure too long and would in all probability presently pass into the limbo of things that have been, but it was giving Ellis a bad time while it lasted. So the scourge and the hair shirt wound the flesh even while the spirit soars.

They sat and smoked, Verney wrestling with his in-subordinate feelings, and his uncle watching the process

The Politician

with open sympathy and covert curiosity. He guessed it had something to do with Harriet, but he did not know precisely what it was that was troubling the younger man.

"Sometimes I wonder why I care so much about politics," said the latter; "sometimes I think it's because of the good I hope to do, and then again," he lowered his voice in a worried way, "I fear it's only because I love the excitement of the game. After all, you know, Uncle Ritchie, I am not sure it is possession so much a man wants, as the fighting for it. I am not sure," his forehead grew puckered with the effort to express clearly what he wanted to say, "that anything in life is worth having for its own sake; I think it's only the trying to get it that counts."

He shook his head sorrowfully as if he feared this view of life might be the right one, and as if it disappointed him.

"Oh, pshaw, no!" said his uncle briskly, "that's not it at all. Life's got a great deal more to it than that — it's a great deal more satisfactory. Anyway," he added, "you don't really think that, you know, Verney. You think you do, but you don't; so have another drink!"

He pressed a glass on the young man. It was the only way he could think of to offer consolation for this trouble, which had not been fully explained to him, but which he concluded at length he understood. He could n't see how any man could help regretting that he had given up his chance with a girl like Harriet Rand,

“What I Cannot Have”

and this he knew his nephew had done. That his regret should come over him more particularly on election night than at any other time, seemed also natural to Mr. Vernor. Did not election night mean to the young man the things for which he had given up love?

“I think I won’t have any more, thanks,” Verney said to him, rejecting the glass. “I must be going now. I must get back to headquarters. It will soon be time to find out who’s who.”

He was at the door and had almost gone when Mr. Vernor found his crutches and hobbled hurriedly toward him.

“Good-night,” he said; and then wistfully, almost fondly, “I wish I could help you, Verney.”

“Oh, no!” said he, “there’s nothing really anyone can help about. There’s nothing the matter, you know, Uncle Ritchie, it’s only”—he broke off and looked suddenly up at Mr. Vernor—“that I always want most what I cannot have.”

Mr. Vernor laid his hand tenderly on the young man’s shoulder.

“I know,” he said; “that’s what we all want, boy.”

And nodding understandingly at each other, they parted.

It was ten by the time Verney found himself downtown. All the way down he had kept watch with a kind of subconscious eagerness (for his mind still dwelt on his conversation with Mr. Vernor and the occasion of it) for “The Herald’s” monster searchlight which was to announce the identity of the next President of

The Politician

the United States and the next Governor of New York, from the top of the Metropolitan Life Insurance Building.

If the Republican Presidential candidate were elected, it was arranged that the light should be flashed to the north; if the Democratic candidate, to the south; and if the Republican candidate for Governor were elected, it was to be flashed to the west; if the Democratic, to the east.

Verney left the automobile within a block or two of Herald Square, for the difficulty of getting through the crowd was great and he thought he should do better on foot. At State headquarters he knew he should find Tommy Beekman, Oliver Ordway, and other loyal Republicans engrossed in the business of getting the totals of missing Districts, which was more important to them than blowing tin horns and otherwise taking part in the merrymaking of the city, but it was so late he felt obliged to abandon his original plan of joining them. Instead, he thought it wisest to make for the nearest bulletin board, as former experience had taught him that the struggle was usually over by eleven o'clock and the result of the election might be announced at any moment. Once on his feet he found himself suddenly engulfed in the inferno of noise and light that is Broadway on election night. That night the great thoroughfare makes peculiarly its own, taking unto itself the various dissimilar and component parts of carnival, noise, color, and confusion; and though always brilliant, adds to its brilliance by more electric light signs than there are

“What I Cannot Have”

stars in the Milky Way. Verney, gasping like a man who has just gotten his head above water after a plunge into the sea, turned up the street toward Herald Square only to find that at that moment the street itself seemed to be coming down. A solid wave of horn-blowing, bell-ringing, rattle-shaking humanity composed of laughing women and shouting men, met him, where he struggled for space to proceed, with the force of a blow.

Escaping with difficulty the efforts of a line of men in lock-step who seemed determined to sweep him before them in their path, he fought his way on through a crowd so great that it filled the sidewalks from curb to wall, and made passage for motors and cabs in the roadway impossible. He soon saw that if he were to get anywhere that night he must follow the example of some enterprising men who had evidently set themselves to the task of realizing that ambition, and were walking on the car tracks in the wake of a bumping, gong-ringing street car, and proceeding slowly but surely. With his coat collar turned up against the shower of confetti which the people hurled at each other from all sides, with vendors of rattles, bells, and horns importuning him at every step, and obliged to duck his head in order to avoid the attentions of sundry light-hearted merrymakers who seemed intent upon smashing his hat for him, the young man at last gained the car tracks and in this fashion made his way up Broadway to the Square.

There as he gained the sidewalk he stopped and bought a paper of a little girl standing on the corner. He didn't really want the paper, for the latest news

The Politician

was being blazoned on the glowing rectangles in front of the Herald Building on the other side of the Square, and he was on his way to read it; but he bought it because it struck him even in the midst of his busy thoughts, his preoccupation with other matters, that it was a piteous thing to find a little girl, a child not ten years old, selling papers at that hour in that dangerously hilarious throng, the press of which was so tremendous that even grown men found it difficult to withstand.

"Thank you!" he said with his charming smile, as the little thing handed him up an extra with a look of wonder on her shawl-enveloped face that he had taken time for the courtesy. And then he saw that her hands were bare and blue with the cold, for a bitter November wind was blowing. Half mechanically and without hesitation, Verney stripped the warm heavy gloves from his own hands and thrust them toward her.

"Here," he said; "put these on. You can't sell papers all night with nothing on your hands, you know. It's too cold."

And he helped her to put them on. They were large, of course, but the patent fasteners at the wrist kept them from slipping off. The child was delighted and shrilled a grateful acknowledgment of his kindness as the young man turned away.

Just at that moment, as he again faced the Herald Building, the bell-ringers on the cornice announced the hour of eleven o'clock in metallic consonance of sound; and as if it had only been waiting for that hour to ar-

“What I Cannot Have”

rive, as if the bells had been the cue for its entrance upon the vast arena of the sky, “The Herald’s” gigantic searchlight from the lofty altitude of the Metropolitan Building blocks away, shot its great beams across the clear, dark heavens. In the wide plaza before the Sun, World, and Tribune Buildings far downtown, in Herald Square and Times Square, in upper Broadway and lower Broadway, in the residence district uptown as far out as the Bronx and Harlem, the great light signalled to waiting thousands. Within a radius of fifty miles about the city, from Morristown to Ronkonkoma, from Newburg to Sea Girt, and even beyond, its message flashed.

Verney felt his heart constrict as a tremendous roar went up from the crowd about him in answer to that great beam of light shooting to the north which announced the election of the Republican candidate for President. Would the Republican party be as victorious in the State election? Would his friend Ordway be elected Governor of New York? That was after all his chief concern, the most vital question of the night to him. It meant, he was convinced, the beginning of a new era in politics, a better and purer era, if the young Speaker of the House at Albany should be established in the executive mansion there. He had hardly time to frame these thoughts before the great light signalled the waiting throng again.

The result of the State elections had been determined beyond the possibility of change, and while the massed thousands around him cheered with only a little less en-

The Politician

thusiasm than they had displayed over the result of the Presidential election, the white beacon of the searchlight flashed directly to the west.

Ordway had won.

There were only two more things that Verney wanted to find out that night,—how his District had done, and what was the name of the man who had been elected Attorney-general of New York. He couldn't help being interested in the latter, he owed it to his party to hope that he had won; and then, he had worked very hard, very conscientiously, over the campaign. He rather expected to find, nevertheless, that Vandewater was victor in that contest, and it was in anticipation of that discovery, with a great pang like despair, that he looked up at the bulletin boards before the Herald Building when he had fought his way around the square to the front of the big crowd that faced them.

Fully prepared to find the name of his rival inscribed after the words, "For Attorney-general," he was therefore greatly astonished to find instead the name, "James Vernor Ellis." The surprise of it fairly staggered him, and for a moment he was unable to read the figures that told the total of votes and by what majority he had won. For a brief and dazzling space of time the moment meant all it should have meant to Verney. He knew then, as he stared up at those astonishing figures on the bulletin board that proved he had won the campaign for Attorney-general, that he had never really expected to win, and that to find he had was the greatest joy a human being could experience.

“What I Cannot Have”

In his most buoyant moments he had never succeeded in imagining what it would be like to taste the cup of success he was tasting then. But now as he stood on the edge of that great concourse of people that filled the air with din of every description, the most wonderful feeling of content came over him. He felt as if life, after keeping one hand behind its back a long while, had suddenly held out the other hand to him; as if while withholding something from him it had given him something else which, if not so precious as love (and as to that question Verney was yet uncertain), was at least his heart's desire.

He was terribly tired. He closed his eyes, standing just where he was with the multitude pressing on all sides of him, and saw as in a vision a great army of soldiers riding by as if returning from a victorious battle field, and on the banners in their midst he saw “Political Purity” and “Reformed Party” inscribed. And he saw, too (for he was very human and normal, his mood when he talked with his uncle and told him he didn't care about the elections, being the only thing about him that was abnormal), himself and his friend Oliver Ordway riding at the head of it. Then close on that wave of exaltation or exultation, he didn't know which it was, came one of reaction, and he was conscious again of that feeling of loss that had overwhelmed him immediately upon learning of Harriet's engagement to George Benton.

There were plenty of places where he could have gone that night and found friends to rejoice with him on

The Politician

his election. Some men he knew were giving a party for the purpose of getting the returns, in the Century Club, where a special wire had been run in; and in a certain broker's office from the windows of which the bulletins in front of the Times Building were visible, Mrs. Ordway was acting as chaperon for a large gathering of girls and young men. In still another office with other friends, he knew he should find his sister Carol; and Beekman and the Governor-elect were assuredly to be found at State headquarters. But Verney eschewed them all. He went instead first to his District headquarters and then directly home, and arrived at the house in Twelfth Street before midnight, although the vast crowds downtown did not cease celebrating the result of the elections for another three hours.

As he passed the door of Mr. Ellis's room, his father's anxious voice hailed him to ask if he had won; and though Verney knew that it meant to his father more than the mere winning, that it meant Verney's freedom from financial difficulties, he found that the glow of victory had departed, and that there was no great satisfaction after all in answering that he had.

In his own room, on his table, when he had lit the gas, he found on top of a pile of letters a telegram from his brother-in-law Lawrence Presbey in Chicago, wishing him the best of luck in the outcome of the elections; and near it on a tray he discovered a little luncheon of sandwiches and cake with a note from his mother saying she thought he might be hungry when he came in and she had brought it up for him herself. Verney was

“What I Cannot Have”

touched. Nanna had been used to perform that little service for him; it was very kind of his mother to do it now, and he knew she was thinking of his old nurse when she did it. Everybody was very kind indeed, and he only wondered a little that their kindness seemed to make him feel so little the happier.

He took up his letters next, and perceiving that one was from Chicago in his sister Cornelia's handwriting, opened it half mechanically. He supposed it was to wish him “good luck” as her husband's telegram had been; and it was, at least in part.

He smiled as he read the would-be enthusiastic expressions of interest in the possibility of his election which Mrs. Presbey had tried so hard not to make perfunctory. Cornelia was not and never had been interested in his political career, he knew, had quite disapproved of it in fact, though he thought too that it was good of her to pretend an interest she could not feel. The close of the letter was what caught Verney's attention.

“What on earth made you treat Harriet Rand as you have?” the lady wanted to know. “She was crazy about you when she went to New York; and when she came home that time and stayed in Lake Forest, a few weeks ago, I saw her, and I could tell then that it was all over. Something had happened to change her mind; and I can only surmise it was something you had done, the way you had behaved.

“Now what a little idiot you are, Verney”—Cornelia was some six years older than her brother—“to throw away a chance like that to marry a rich girl as nice as

The Politician

Harriet! I'd like to know what you did it for. On account of your silly old politics, I suppose. [This one remark made him feel he was justified in doubting the sincerity of her interest in the outcome of his campaign.] But of course I could n't expect a brother of mine to have sense enough to fall in love with an heiress!"

The Politician laid down the letter with a sigh. Sisters were an awful bother sometimes, awful busybodies. But, thank goodness, he did n't have to order his life to suit Cornelia! He smiled with grim enjoyment to think how angry she would be if she knew that at that very moment the heiress in question was engaged to George Benton. Then he passed his hand wearily over his forehead. It was getting too much for him, this trouble and doubt in his heart. He supposed he must presently go to bed and sleep, but at the moment he felt impelled to go over and stand under the portrait of Abraham Lincoln on the east wall, passing as he did so and without so much as a look at it, that other portrait on the opposite wall of the great Emperor of the French.

Into the presence of the great Emancipator — of that supreme patriot who knew before all men what self-sacrifice meant, whose very life had not been considered too big a price to pay for the privilege of serving his fellow men — the young man came, fresh from having made offering on that same altar of self-sacrifice, fresh from the renunciation of his sweetest hope of earthly happiness, to ask of the one man who knew, if he had done

“What I Cannot Have”

well. For a moment he gazed earnestly up into the rugged features of the face above him upon which the bereavement of a nation had forever chiselled itself, and then — his youth the more apparent for his worn look and tired eyes — he bent his head and bowed his shoulders as if himself bereaved.

And Lincoln gazed kindly down upon the sorrowful, drooping figure beneath him, as if he understood the magnitude of the sacrifice which his disciple had made for the hope of realizing an unselfish ideal, and as if in this young man who was a professed politician he recognized a patriot.

THE END

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY
BERKELEY

Return to desk from which borrowed.
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

27 May 49 EL

5 Dec '50 H J

REC'D LD

OCT 3 1962

18 Oct '61 JH

REC'D LD

OCT 9 1961

17 Oct '62 V

YB 33380

M255525

961

M3984

poe

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

